

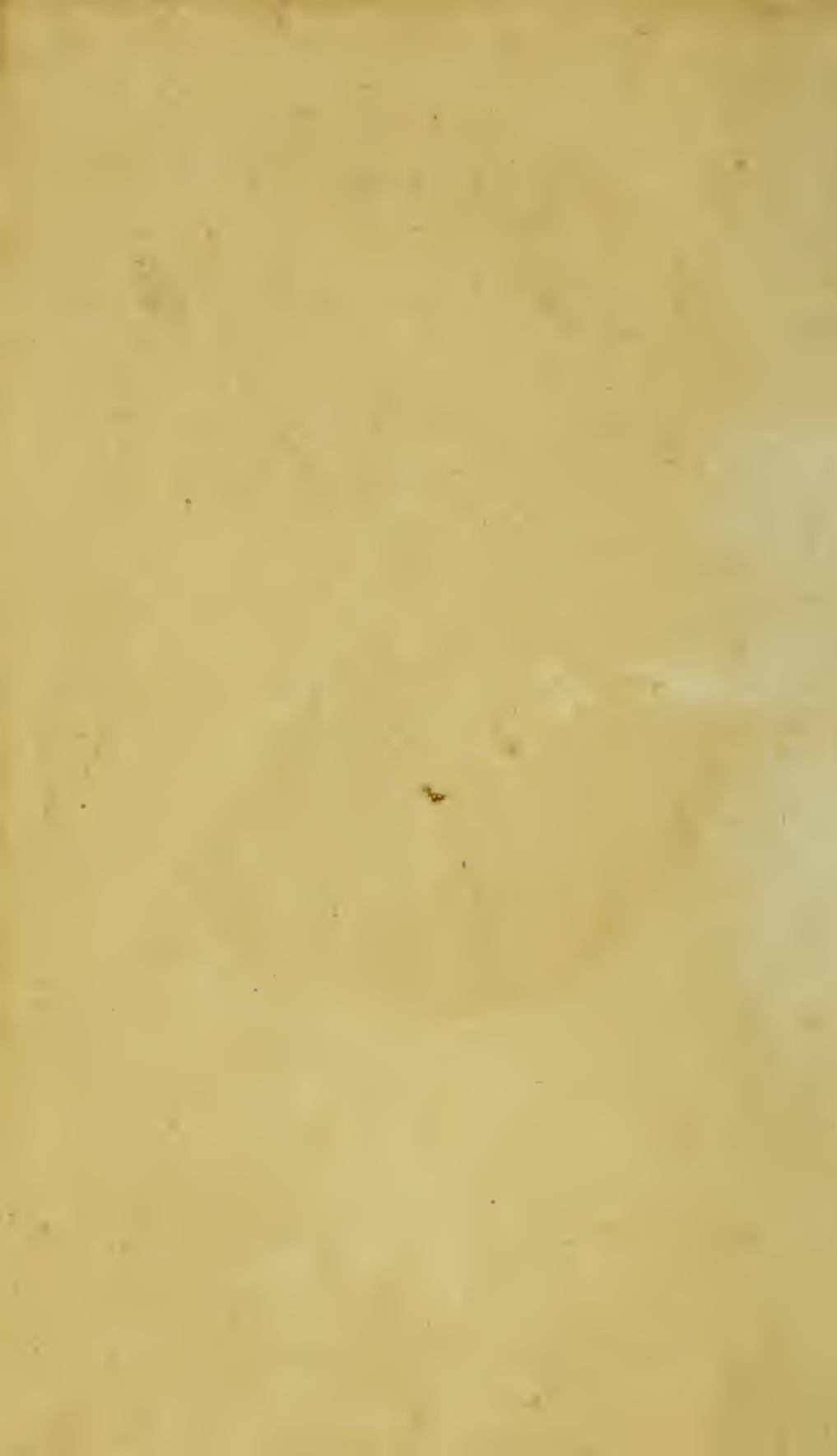




Hubbardston Social

Libra N<sup>o</sup> 44 —

Dec 20th 1807 —







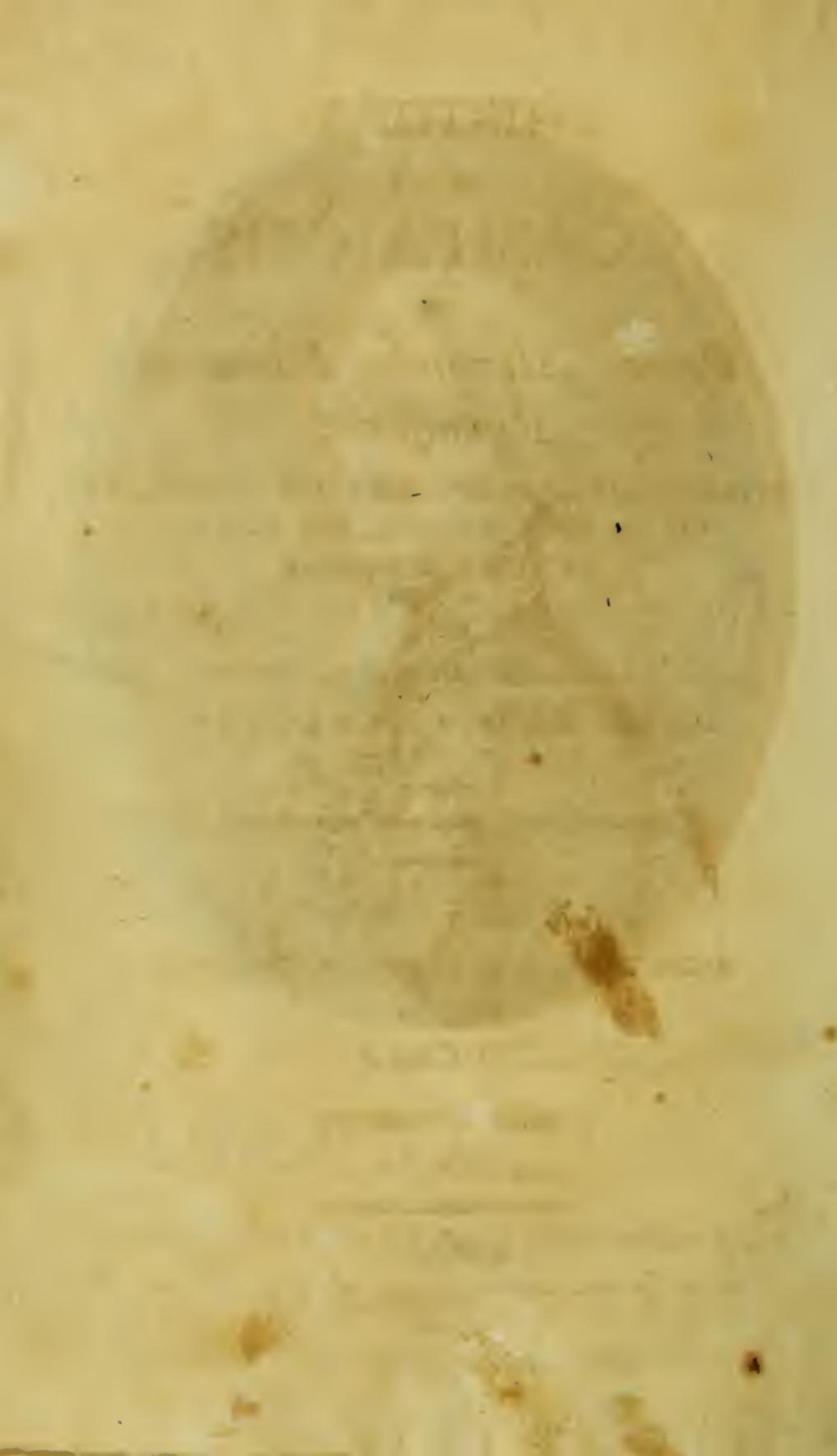
T. Clarke Sculp.

Field - Marshal  
PRINCE ALEXANDER SUWOROW.

Aged .69.

Published by W. Cobbett, New York, 1800.





HISTORY  
OF THE  
CAMPAIGNS

OF  
*Prince Alexander Suworow,  
Rymnikski,*

FIELD-MARSHAL-GENERAL IN THE SERVICE OF  
HIS IMPERIAL MAJESTY, THE EMPEROR  
OF ALL THE RUSSIANS,

WITH  
A PRELIMINARY SKETCH OF HIS PRIVATE  
LIFE AND CHARACTER.

—>>@<<—  
Translated from the German of Frederic Anthing.

—>>@<<—  
TO WHICH IS ADDED,  
A CONCISE AND COMPREHENSIVE HISTORY  
OF HIS  
*ITALIAN CAMPAIGN.*

—  
VOL. I.  
—

—  
NEW-YORK:  
PRINTED BY G. AND R. WAITE, FOR WM. COBBETT.  
1800.



RBR  
Jan 2  
#833

---

---

## To the Reader.

---

I OFFER to the reader a History of the Campaigns of a man, who is the object of admiration in every part of Europe, who has long been ranked among the most celebrated heroes of the North, and who has immortalized the glory of the Russian arms.

I should have deferred the publication of this work to a more distant period, had I not felt it a duty, to yield to the earnest solicitations of a crowd

of persons, who venerate the character of Field-Marshal-General Count Suworow.

I flatter myself that this Essay will find a favourable reception ; and that the public will receive as much satisfaction in reading these Mcmoirs, as I have experienced in writing them.

FREDERICK ANTHING.

---

---

## TABLE

OF

## CONTENTS.

---

**B**IOGRAPHICAL *Preface*, containing a summary account of the private life and character of Count Alexander Suworow Rymnikski.

### CHAP. I.

#### Seven years war with the Prussians.

*Suworow enters into the army, in 1742. He marches against the Prussians, in the seven years war, with the rank of first major, and is at the battle of Kunnersdorf, and the taking of Berlin. He is appointed to the light troops, under the command of General Berg. Battle of Reichenbach, in the environs of Breslau. Berg is sent with a detachment in pursuit of the Prussians. Suworow surprises Landsberg. Engagement near Stargard. Frequent skirmishes. Suworow beats Courbiere, and takes him*

prisoner. He surprises Goldnaw. General Werner is made prisoner. Dearth of provisions in Colberg. Forces the Prussian general, Platen, and Prince Eugene, of Wurtemburg, to retreat into Saxony. Colberg surrenders to Count Romanzow. The troops go into winter quarters, 1762. Truce, between Prussia and Russia, followed by a peace. Suworow is dispatched to Petersburg, where he is advanced to the rank of colonel.

## CHAP. II.

### War with the Confederates of Poland, 1769.

The Empress proceeds to Moscow to be crowned. On her return, attended a review of the regiment of Suworow. Remains with his regiment at Lado-ga during two years. A grand camp at Petersburg, for the practice of manœuvres. Suworow advanced to the rank of brigadier. Marches into Poland against the confederates. Is sent to Warsaw, and completes eighty (German) miles in twelve days. He beats Kotelupowski near Warsaw. Defeats and disperses the troops commanded by the two Pulawskis. Takes his quarters at Lublin, and is made major-general. Falls in the river near Clementow, and is very much hurt. Action near Landskron, in which two marshals are killed, and several made prisoners. He returns to Lublin. On his march thither fights Pulawski and Nowisi. Kosakowski forms a second confederation in Lithuania, and gains some advantages over the Russians. Suworow leaves Lublin, in order to attack it. Defeats the army of the

confederates under Oginiski. The Empress sends him the order of St. Alexander. Adventure with Colonel Sabrowski. Suworow marches towards Cracow, and joins a corps under the command of General Braniski. The confederates surprise the castle of Cracow. Suworow arrives, and forms a blockade. The garrison capitulate. Articles of capitulation. An attempt upon Tynez. Entrance of the Austrian and Prussian troops into Poland. First division of that kingdom. Suworow returns to Petersburg. He is ordered to visit the frontiers of Finland.

## CHAP. III.

## First war against the Turks.

Suworow arrives at the army of Jassy, 1773. Receives a command. Passes the Danube, and defeats the Turks, at Turbakay. The Empress sends the order of St. George, of the second class. He beats the Turks a second time in the same place. Possesses himself of a considerable flotilla. Receives another command near Nisrow. Defeats the Turks again near that place. Retires, ill with a fever, into Russia. Returns, in the spring, to the banks of the Danube. Receives the brevet of lieutenant-general. Commands the second division, and the corps de reserve. Joins general Kanenski. Defeats the Turks near Kasludgi. Goes to Buchkereft, for the recovery of his health. Peace is concluded. He returns to Russia.

## CHAP. IV.

Pagutschew pursued and made prisoner.

*Suworow is employed to quiet interior disturbances. Michelson defeats Pugatschew near Zarizin. Suworow pursues the rebels to Uralski. He conducts their chief prisoner to Simbirsk. Takes upon him the command of the troops there, in the absence of Count Panin. Rejoicings for the peace at Moscow. Suworow remains for some time on his estates.*

## CHAP. V.

Operations in the Cuban and the Crimea.

*Suworow is sent into the Crimea, and is present at the elevation of Schahin Ghiray, to the dignity of Khan. He goes to Pultawa, where he is attacked by an inflammatory fever. Rejoins his corps on the Cuban, and erects fortifications on the banks. The different people of Circassia. Goes to the Crimea after the departure of Count Prosorowski, and receives a command. The Porte disturbed at the appointment of the new Khan. Suworow compels a Turkish flotilla to leave the port of Achtiar; and obliges the Captain Pacha to retire, with a numerous fleet. He brings away Greek and Armenian families from the Crimea into Russia. The Attukays make irruptions into the Cuban. Treaty between Russia and the Porte. Schahin Schiary is acknowledged Khan, by the Grand Sultan. The*

Russian troops retire from the Cuban to the Crimea. Suworow is charged with the command of the troops in Little Russia. The Empress makes him a present of her portrait. He takes a journey to Petersburg. He is charged with a commission for Astracan, and the Caspian sea. He obtains the command of the division of Casan.

## CHAP. VI.

The Tartars of the Crimea and of Nogay swear obedience to Russia. An expedition against those of Nogay.

Revolt against the new Khan of the Crimea. He takes to flight, and is re-established. Suworow takes the command of a corps in the Cuban. The Khan abdicates his dignity. Repast of the Tartars of Nogay. Suworow compels them to take the oath of fidelity. Second repast. Suworow receives a diploma from the Empress, with the great cross of the order of Wolodimir. Details on the origin of the Tartars of Nogay. The ancient khan of the Tartars quits the Crimea. He produces an insurrection among those of Nogay. Divers actions with them, and among themselves. Numbers of them fly to the other side of the Cuban. Retreat by the wilds to Juy. Suworow enters into winter quarters at Saint Demetrius. Intimate connection between Mursabey and Suworow. The journey of the latter to Moscow. He receives the command of the division of Wolodomir, 1785. Scabin Schiray, who has passed some time

*in Russia, returns to Turkey. He is beheaded at Rhodes.*

## CHAP. VII.

*War against the Turks, in 1787.*

Suworow is named general-in-chief. Journey of the Empress to the Crimea. On this occasion Suworow is appointed to command the corps distributed in the environs of Kiowie and Pultawa; and, soon after, that of Cherson, of which that of Kinburn makes a part. Kinburn surprised by the Turks. Bloody but victorious engagement. Suworow is wounded in the arm. He celebrates the victory. Receives the order of St. Andrew. He passes the winter at Kinburn, and takes measures against the future surprise of that town.

## CHAP. VIII.

Suworow receives the command of the fleet on the Black Sea. The Turks send a considerable fleet to Ockzakow. Suworow erects a strong battery near Kinburn. Advantages gained by the Prince of Nassau, over the Turks, in three different engagements. They sustain an immense loss. Hassan Bacha returns to Constantinople, with the remains of his fleet. Prince Potemkin besieges Ockzakow. Suworow commands the left wing of the army. He is dangerously wounded in the neck, in a sally of the garrison. He is removed

to Kinburn. A magazine of powder is blown up, and he is again wounded. Assault of Ockzakow.

## CHAP. IX.

Suworow arrives at Jassy, from Petersburg. He takes the command of the corps of Berlat. Prince Saxe Cobourg incamps near Suworow. Sultan Selim ascends the throne. He augments his army. Cobourg informs Suworow that the Turks are on their march against him, and the latter immediately forms a junction. Action of the cavalry at Putna. Battle of Forhani. Capture of the fortified convents of Saint Samuel and Saint John. Conference of Cobourg and Suworow, after the victory. Loss of the Turks in the battle. Letter of the Emperor Joseph to Suworow.

## CHAP. X.

Return of General Suworow to Berlat. Intelligence received of the march of the principal army of the Turks. Cobourg requests Suworow to join him, and he forms a junction by forced marches. He confers with Cobourg and then proceeds to reconnoitre. Battle of Rymnik. Loss of the Turks. Their army retires beyond the Danube, and disperses. Cobourg separates from Suworow, who is created a Count of Russia and the Empire. He receives letters from the Emperor Joseph, and the Empress of Russia.

## CAAP. XI.

Suworow returns to Berlat. He connects himself with the Seraskier, at Brakilow. Cobourg fixes his winter quarters near Suwcrow. His corps reinforced. Haffan Bacha as Grand Vizier, makes proposals for peace. His death puts an end to them. The Grand Vizier passes the Danube. Suworow quits his winter quarters. He writes to Cobourg, and afterwards joins him by forced marches. Letter of the Emperor Leopold. Armistice of Reichenbach changes the face of affairs. Suworow takes leave of Cobourg and retires. Letter of the Prince de Cobourg. Dulcia, Kilia, and Isaccio are taken. The General Sudowitsch, and admiral Rilas approach Ismail. The siege is deferred on account of the advanced state of the season.

## CHAP. XII.

Suworow receives orders to take Ismail. He marches thither. Reconnoitres the place. Preparations made for an assault. Blockade of Ismail. Position of the besiegers. Immense garrison of Turks. The place summoned. The answer of the Seraskier. Second summons Harrangue of Suworow to the generals and the troops. Distribution of the column, by land and by water. Signal of assault. The ramparts are scaled and taken. Sally of the Turks. Bloody combats in the streets and public places. Several fortified buildings taken. Importance of this capture.

Festivals which succeed. Letter from the Emperor Leopold. Journey of Suworow to Petersburg.

### CHAP. XIII.

Journey of Suworow to the frontiers of Sweden. He is charged to command the troops which are in Finland, and the fleet stationed on the coast of that Province. He erects redoubts. Peace is made with the Turks. He receives the command of the army on the frontiers of Turkey, and sets out for Cherson. Letter from the Empress to Suworow.

### CHAP. XIV.

*The last campaign in Poland, and the downfall of that kingdom in 1794.*

Suworow leaves Cherson to inspect the frontiers of the Crimea. Insurrection at Cracow and Warsaw. The influence of that event on the Polish soldiers in the pay of Russia, &c. Suworow receives an order to disarm these brigades. Measures relative to this operation. His corps marches that very day in different detachments, and executes the commission. He re-assembles his corps at Niemerow. He pays a visit to Count Romanzow, at his country seat.

### CHAP. XV.

Events of the war, subsequent to the insurrection of Warsaw. Siege of Warsaw. Suworow receives

orders to enter Poland. The rapidity of his march. First attack at Divan. Defeat at Kobrin. Defeat of the Poles at Krupezye.

---

## VOL II.

[*begins with*] CHAP. X.

March of the Russians to Brzescie, where the Polish corps had retired. Report of a Jew, on the position of Syrakowski, &c. Dispositions of Suworow. His corps passes the river, during the night. Syrakowski is attacked. Enormous loss of the Poles. Suworow goes to Brzescie, and encamps before Therespol.

## CHAP. XI.

Suworow demands of Prince Repnin, that the corps of Derfelden may join him. Kosciusco learns the defeat of Brzescie, &c. Movements of General Fersen. Suworow's corps so weakened, by its detachments, that it cannot undertake any thing. The Prince of Zizianow takes Grabowski prisoner, &c. A courier from Makranowski to Kosciusco is taken. Report of Derfelden, who approaches Suworow. Fersen passes the Vistula, gains the battle of Matschewiz, and takes Kosciusco prisoner. Measures taken by Suworow to form a junction with Derfelden and Fersen. He

Marches for Warsaw. Some circumstances relating to Kosciusco.

### CHAP. XII.

Derfelden approaches Suworow. His advanced guard defeats the rear guard of Makranowski, whose corps retire to Warsaw. Suworow approaches Praga, a suburb of that capital. Junction with the corps of Fersen. He takes the route of Kobylka. Attacks, and almost destroys, a detachment of the enemy, amounting to five thousand men. Suworow fixes his head quarters at Kobylka. Fersen encamps on the left wing, and Derfelden on the right. Preparations for the assault of Praga. Makranowski returns thither, and resigns his command.

### CHAP. XIII.

The generals reconnoitre the fortifications of Praga. The majors, Bischefski and Muller, arrive from Warsaw, charged with commissions. Answer of Suworow to General Zeyonschik. Departure of Kobylka for the assault of Praga. The army encamps round that suburb. Batteries erected. Distribution of troops for the attack. Assault of Praga. The bridge destroyed. Loss of the Poles.

### CHAP. XIV.

The King of Poland, and Magistrates of Warsaw, send deputies to Suworow, respecting the capitulation.

lation of Warsaw. He confers with them, and proposes the articles. Correspondence relative to this object. Fersen passes the Vistula. Sedition at Warsaw. The chiefs wish to take away the king, &c. Farther communications between the king and Suworow. The latter proposes his ultimate conditions. The Polish troops evacuate Warsaw. The king and the magistrates consent to the entrance of the Russian troops.

### CHAP. XV.

Suworow enters, with his army, into Warsaw. He pays the king a visit of ceremony. The substance of their conversation.

### CHAP. XVI.

Fersen pursues the Poles, who have quitted Warsaw. They form four considerable divisions. They, at length lay down their arms. Passports are given to those who engage to quit the service. Those who refuse are sent into the interior parts of the country. Several Polish chiefs and generals have secretly escaped.

### CHAP. XVII.

A sketch of the campaign. Suworow receives the staff of field-marshall, the orders of Prussia, and the portrait of the Emperor Francis II. and very considerable portions of land, &c. from the Em-

press. He passes a year at Warsaw. Makes a review of his army. His journey to Petersburg. The honours he receives there. He departs for his new command on the frontiers of Turkey. He sends his troops into winter quarters.

### SUPPLEMENT.

Different letters, from the Empress Catharine, the Emperor Francis II., the King of Prussia, and the King of Poland, to Field Marshal Suworow, during and after the campaign of Poland.

---

## *Biographical Preface.*

---

IN passing through Cherson, on my way to Constantinople, I had the happiness to form an intimate acquaintance with the Count Suworow, and to pass some months at his house. Of such an opportunity I diligently availed myself, to obtain authentic accounts of every circumstance that was connected with his military career; and I collected them not only from the oral relation of several persons who were witnesses of his glorious exploits, but from his own personal communications. As to the particular details, I have since compared them with, and rectified them by, official reports.

But, however interesting it might be to possess the most minute circumstances of the private life of a man, whose name fills so large a space in the page of history, it is my office to give no more than a general outline of it.

The family of Suworow was originally from Sweden, and of a noble descent. The first of this name settled in Russia, the latter end of the last century; and, having engaged in the wars against the Tartars and the Poles, were rewarded by the Czars of that period, with lands and peasants.

Basil Suworow, the father of the field-marshall, was the godson of Peter I. He was held in high estimation for his political knowledge, as well as extensive erudition ; and enjoyed, at his death, the two-fold rank of general and senator.

Alexander Basilowitsch Suworow, the hero of this work, and of Europe, was born in the year 1730. His father had destined him for the robe ; but his earlier inclinations impelled him to the profession of a soldier ; and the same spirit has conducted him through a long and unrivalled career of glory, to attain the distinguished rank of field-marshall ; and, after having conquered for his country, to conquer for Europe.

It is the custom for the sons of persons of distinction, in Russia, to be enrolled in the army at a very early age ; sometimes, within a year after their birth. But the young Suworow had attained twelve years before his name was, fortunately for his country, inscribed on the military roll of the Russian army. He remained, however, at home for a few years, in order to complete his education, under the superintendance of a father, who was so well qualified to conduct it.

From his earliest youth he was enamoured of the sciences ; and improved himself in them. Cornelius Nepos was a favourite classic ; and he read with great avidity and attention, the histories of those renowned captains, Turenne and Montecuculi. But Cæsar and Charles XII were the heroes whom he most admired, and whose activity and courage became the favourite objects of his imi-

tation. History and philosophy had great attractions for him ; he studied the first in Rollin and Hubner, and the second in Wolf and Leibnitz.

He is master of the principal part of the European languages. He speaks and writes both German and French, as if they were his native tongues.\* He is also well acquainted with those of Italy and Moldavia, of Poland, and Turkey ; and he can converse in all the various dialects of the people whom he has subdued.

In 1774, he married Barba Nanowna, Princeps Prosoorowski, daughter of the General Prince Iwan

\* We shall here beg leave to give an example of his manner of writing the French language, by presenting our readers with an original letter, written by him to Charette, when he commanded the royalist party, in La Vendée, in 1795 :

“ Le General Suworow à M. de Charette, Generalissime des  
“ troupes du roi de France, à son quartier general.

“ Héros de la Vendée ! illustre défenseur de la foi de tes  
“ peres, et du trône de tes rois, salut !

“ Que le Dieu des armées veille à jamais sur toi ; qu'il guide  
“ ton bras à travers les bataillons de tes nombreux ennemis, qui,  
“ marqués du doigt de ce Dieu vengeur, tomberont dispersés  
“ comme le feuille qu'un vent du nord a frappé !

“ Et vous, immortels Vendéens, fideles conservateurs de l'honneur des Français ; dignes compagnons d'armes d'un Héros  
“ guidés par lui, relevez le Temple du Seigneur, et le trône de  
“ vos rois !

“ Que le mechant perisse ! .... Que sa trace s'efface, ....  
“ Alors que la paix bienfaisante renaisse, et que la tige antique

Prosofowski ; by whom he has two children now living : Natalia, Countess Suworow, who married General Count Nicolai Zoubow ; and Arcadius, who is about fourteen years of age, a youth of great promise, and a lieutenant in one of the regiments of guards.

Notwithstanding his age, his long and laborious marches, which form an enormous aggregate of six thousand German miles (equal to twenty thousand of English measure) ; notwithstanding his wounds and military toils, Suworow still preserves the gaiety of youth. He is free from all corporeal weakness and infirmity ; a circumstance which must be attributed to the hardy habits of his life, his robust constitution, and rigid temperance. Distinct as he is, in the more striking features of his character, from the common race of men ; that difference is seen to prevail, even in his ordinary transactions, in

“ des Lys, que la tempête avoit courbée, se relève du milieu de  
“ vous, plus brillante, et plus majestueuse.

“ Brave Charette ! honneur des Chevaliers Francais ! L'Univers est plein de ton nom ! L'Europe étonnée te contemple,  
“ . . . . et moi je t'admire et te felicite. . . . . Dieu te chérît,  
“ comme autrefois David, pour punir le Philistin. Adores ses  
“ décrets. Vole, attaque, frappe, et la victoire suivra tes pas.

“ Tels sont les vœux d'un soldat qui, blanchi aux champs de  
“ l'honneur, vit constamment la victoire couronner la confiance  
“ qu'il avoit placée dans le Dieu des combats. Gloire à lui, car  
“ il est la source de toute gloire. Gloire à toi,—car il te ché-  
“ rit.

“ SUWOROW.”

*Le premier d'Octobre, 1795.*  
*A. Varsovie.*

his mode of living, and the distribution of his time.

He rises about four in the morning, both in winter and summer, in town, and in the country. His bed is not contrived by art to indulge the effeminate voluptuary, it is not made of down, or surrounded with silken curtains, but is formed of the simple materials of nature, which afford, to the peasant, fatigued with labour, the refreshing sweets of sleep. A heap of fresh hay, sufficiently elevated, and scattered into considerable breadth, is his humble couch. A white sheet is spread over it, with a cushion for his pillow, and his cloak for a coverlid. He generally sleeps without body linen; and in summer, he passes his day and night in a tent in his garden.

It is not to be supposed that the toilet occupies any portion of his time; but when he is not on active service, he is clean in his person, and frequently washes himself in the course of the day. He confines his dress to an uniform, and a kind of close jacket, called a *gurtka*: but robes de chambre, and riding coats, are banished from his wardrobe, and he never suffers the indulgence of gloves, or a pelisse, but when a winter's march compels him to use them.

After his breakfast, which consists of tea, he walks, for an hour, by way of exercise, and then sits seriously down to the official duties of the day. He reads letters and reports, distributes the necessary orders, and continues, without relaxation, his professional occupations till noon. He dictates such alterations as he thinks necessary to be made

in the various dispatches which are presented to his inspection ; and he will sometimes write them himself. His style is manly and concise ; and so correct is he in the choice of his expressions, that he is never known to efface them.

The hour of his dinner is irregular, and varies from nine to twelve ; and, during his repast, he is frequently communicative and full of vivacity : his table generally consists of about twenty covers ; but he is himself a rare example of temperance, and observes the fasts of the Greek church with the most undeviating rigour. Immediately after his dinner, he passes a few hours in sleep, and supper is not a meal with him.

He knows little of the amusements and pastimes which luxury has invented, and lassitude demands, to quicken the pace, or relieve the burthen, time.

His principal occupation, and, at the same time, his favourite diversion, is war and its duties. However severe he may be with his soldiers, whether in their discipline and manœuvres, or the incredible marches (sometimes of ten German miles a day), by which he has given such eclat and effect to his campaigns, they all regard him with an affection which borders on idolatry ; and under his command they are inspired with a courage that renders them invincible : but whether they are engaged in the hurry of a campaign, or enjoying the repose of winter quarters, their necessary wants and appropriate comforts are the constant objects of his protecting attention.

The small portion of leisure which he enjoys is devoted to reading. But as the military science has long been, and continues to be, the sole object of his regard, those authors of every nation, who investigate, illustrate, or improve it, engross his literary attentions. He does not, however, neglect to get information of what is passing in the world, from the communications afforded by the journals and gazettes of foreign countries.

He dislikes all public entertainments ; though when any particular circumstance leads him thither, he appears to partake, and endeavours to promote the general pleasure. He will sometimes even dance and play at cards, though very rarely indeed, and merely that he may not interrupt the etiquette of public manners.

His father bequeathed him a considerable property, which the grateful bounty of the Empress, has considerably augmented ; though he constantly refused all presents, in money or land, till the interest of his children could be benefited by such gratifications. He entrusts the administration of his private affairs to others ; and possesses none of those baubles which the rich too generally regard, as contributing to the enjoyment and pleasure of life. He has neither villa, nor plate, nor equipage, nor liveried servants, nor pictures, nor rare collections. As a warrior, he has no fixed habitation ; he contents himself with whatever he finds, requires nothing but what absolute necessity demands, and which may be transported with ease from one place to another. It is also among the singular, though unimportant circumstances of his

life, that he has not made use of a looking-glass for twenty years, or, during that period, encumbered his person with either watch or money.

With respect to his character, he is a man of the most incorruptible probity, immovable in his purposes, and inviolable in his promises. Nor do these sturdy virtues disqualify him, from possessing the most engaging manners. He is continually striving to moderate a violence of temper, which he has not been able to extinguish. An effervescent spirit of impatience continues to predominate in his character; and it, perhaps, never happened, that the execution of any of his orders has been equal to the rapidity of his wishes.

He is sincerely religious, not from enthusiasm, but from principle; and takes every opportunity of attending the offices of public devotion: nay, when circumstances afford him the opportunity, he will, on Sundays and festivals, deliver lectures on subjects of piety, to those whom duty calls to an attendance upon him.

The love of his country, and the ambition to contend in arms for its glory, are the powerful and predominant emotions of his indefatigable life, and to them, like the ancient Romans, he sacrifices every other sentiment, and consecrates, without reserve, all the faculties of his nature.

His military career has been one long, uniform course of success and triumph, produced by his enterprizing courage, and extraordinary presence of mind, by his personal intrepidity and prompti-

tude of execution, by the rapid and unparalleled movements of his armies, and by their perfect assurance of victory, in fighting under his banners.

Such is the private life and character of Suworow: his public actions are displayed in the succeeding volumes.

---

# CAMPAIGNS

OF

## PRINCE ALEXANDER SUWOROW

## RYMNICKSKI.

---

### CHAP. I.

*ENTRANCE OF SUWOROW INTO THE ARMY ; AND  
HIS FIRST CAMPAIGN AGAINST THE PRUSSIANS,  
IN THE SEVEN YEARS WAR.*

COUNT Alexander Suworow-Rymnicki began his military career as a private soldier. In 1742, he was enrolled as a fusileer in the guards of Seimonow. In 1747, he served as a corporal ; two years after he obtained some farther advancement, which was soon followed by his promotion to the rank of serjeant. During this period, he was employed as a courier in Poland and Germany. In 1754, he quitted the guards with the brevet of lieutenant of the army. In 1756, he had the conduct of the provisions ; was afterwards lieutenant to the auditor-general, and appointed to the command of Memel, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel.

He made his first campaign, in the seven years war against the Prussians, in 1759 ; and entered upon actual service under Prince Wolgonski, and

attended, as senior officer on duty, on the Commander-in-Chief Count Fermor, who, admiring the consummate resolution which he appeared to possess, favoured him with his particular confidence. He was also at the battle of Runnesdorff, and at the capture of Berlin, by Tottleben; but on these occasions, he found no opportunity to acquire distinction.

In 1761, he was ordered on service in the light troops under General Berg. That corps marched to Breslau, and served to cover the retreat of the Russian army, in which Major-General Ballenbach had been left in the entrenchments.

On the first day of this retreat, General Knobloch, at the head of a considerable body of Prussian troops, marched against the Russians, with drums beating and colours flying; but Suworow directed the artillery with such effect, that the very first grenades which were thrown, set fire to a large magazine of hay, and blew up several chests of powder. The cannonade continued till General Knobloch thought it necessary to retreat. This affair took place near the village of Reichenbach, at a small distance from Breslau.

The body of light Russian troops proceeded to take post between two villages, called the great and the little Wanderins, in the neighbourhood of Lightz, and about a mile and a half from the Prussian army. The design of the King of Prussia was to interrupt the march of the Russians towards the Convent of Wallstadt; but before day break the Russian troops were in motion, and Suworow

attacked, with great ardour, the Prussian advanced posts, which, being forced to give way, were immediately supported, by the king's orders, with several thousand men. The Russians defended themselves with the most deliberate courage and regained their first position. The Prussians returned several times to the attack, but without success; and though the main body of the army was approaching to their support, the Russians established their camp at Wallstadt, and enclosed it with entrenchments.

Laudohn, who was in the neighbourhood, advanced with thirty squadrons, when the king ordered a regiment of the Finkenstein dragoons to attack a strong party of them: but, though the Prussians had the advantage in this engagement, and made a considerable number of prisoners, they left many of their companions behind them on the field.—The hussars of Woldum and Malachowski greatly distinguished themselves on the occasion. The Prussians encamped in the evening, extending their left wing towards the Convent of Wallstadt, and entrenched themselves. They had formed their camp at about half a mile at most from the Russians, but the latter finding themselves straitened for their advanced posts, Suworow and Lieutenant-Colonel Tekelly, attacked, with a running fire, the strong picquets of the Prussians, drove them in, and possessed themselves of the ground which their position required.

On the following day, after several skirmishes, the corps of light Russian troops took the Convent, which was defended by the artillery of the

Prussians ; but they were soon dislodged, and the place strengthened with a considerable garrison. In a few days, that part of the army which the king commanded in person returned to its first position ; but his majesty soon quitted it for Schweidnitz, where, contrary to his usual practice, he entrenched himself.

The imperial troops were in possession of Liegnitz ; to the left of which place was the Russian camp ; and on the left of the camp was the imperial army, commanded by Loudohn, which, by means of a detached corps, formed a communication with Liegnitz ; so that the Prussian army was, in a great measure, inclosed at Schweidnitz.

The troops being rather scattered they drew nearer to each other ; Suworow was ordered to march with a Russian corps ; and with sixty Cossacs of Krasnoscchi, he instantly attacked a picquet of Prussian hussars consisting of about one hundred men posted on a hill. The Russians were twice repulsed, but, on the third charge, they routed the enemy and gained the height from whence they saw the black and yellow regiments of Prussian hussars in the valley beneath them. In this position he remained unmolested, and receiving, in about two hours, a reinforcement of two regiments of Cossacs, amounting to about a thousand men, he made a movement in order to attack the enemy ; but, as the day began to decline, the Prussian troops retired to their camp ; and, during the night, the Russians took possession of the ground which they had abandoned.

Various skirmishes took place between the hostile troops ; but the Russians always contrived to maintain their posts. One morning, in particular, Suworow with the two regiments of Popow and Durowerow made so close an attack on the Prussian entrenchments, that he saw very distinctly the tents which formed the head-quarters of the king, and drove back the black and yellow hussars with considerable loss.

Among the Prussian deserters which continually came over, one of them, who was a serjeant, gave Suworow a very minute account of the magazines in Schweidnitz ; by which it appeared that the town was still supplied with bread and forage for three months.

Deserters were always sent to the head-quarters of Field-Marshal Butterlin, but Suworow advised General Berg to keep this serjeant with him, least his account of the actual state of Schweidnitz should induce the Field-Marshal to change his present dispositions. General Berg, however, disregarded this proposal : as soon, therefore, as it was known that there was such a large supply of provisions in the place, and that the Prussians who covered it could maintain themselves so long, the Russian army abandoned its position, (on the 29th of August) and encamped behind Leignitz, as it was pretended, from the want of herbage. Laudohn was obliged also, to his great mortification, to resume the position which he had already occupied.

In the beginning of the summer, in the same year, Count Romanzow formed the blockade of

Colberg. His Prussian Majesty to relieve that place, detached General Platen at the head of ten or twelve thousand men, with orders to direct his march from Silesia, by Poland, and to destroy, in his way, the Russian magazines of provisions and forage. On his route, he fell in with the Brigadier Tscherepow, who commanded the reserve of the flying magazine; and defended himself, with no more than a thousand men, for two hours, against the Prussian detachment; but was at length overpowered by numbers. The brigadier was made prisoner, with eight hundred men, and the loss of four pieces of cannon, and they were all sent off for Custin. The Russians lost two hundred and the Prussians four hundred men in this engagement.

Field-Marshal Butterlin had ordered a body of light troops to set out on a false march, which was so well managed, that from the third day the Russians had it in their power to overtake General Platen. This corps, which was entirely cavalry, consisted of twenty squadrons of horse grenadiers, twelve squadrons of dragoons, thirty squadrons of hussars, five regiments of Cossacs, and six pieces of cannon.

General Berg, accompanied by Suworow, joined the advanced guard with four squadrons of cavalry, four regiments of Cossacs, and four pieces of cannon; and, by this forced march, he cut off General Platen from the grand magazines of Posnania and other places.

The advanced guard met the Prussians in the environs of Kortian, and the Brigadier-General Mil-

gunow followed it with the main body at the distance of about a mile. General Berg accordingly directed him to join the advanced guard ; though the latter had received orders to begin the attack even if that junction was not effected.

The Russians, availing themselves of the obscurity of the night, traversed a thick wood, in order to come upon the rear of the Prussian camp : but at break of day the Prussians were already formed ; their first line being composed of cavalry, and their second of infantry. The Russian artillery, however, small as it was, obliged them to change their order, and to bring their infantry in front. The Prussians were now supported by thirty pieces of cannon ; but the thickness of the wood prevented a discovery of the small number of Russian troops ; so that when it became broad day-light, the former, instead of making an attack, marched across a narrow way, between two pieces of water, with their cavalry in the rear. General Berg pursued them with the advanced guard, and made two hundred prisoners.

Brigadier Milgunow did not join the advanced guard till the morrow, and frequent skirmishes took place during several successive days, with various success : they were, however, sufficient to force General Platen to make a movement, in order to get into Pomerania, by the left bank of the river Warta. The Russians, therefore, made a stand on the right bank, and threw every possible obstacle in the way of the enemy, to interrupt and retard their march.

Suworow, with a hundred Cossacs of the regiment of Durowerow, swam across the river Netze to Driesen, and, during the night, marched six miles to Landsberg, a town situate on the Warta. He beat down the gates with large clubs, rushed into the town, and made two detachments of hussars, consisting of about fifty men, with their officers, prisoners of war. He burned half the bridge over the Warta, and remained in the place, till the Prussian detachment, under General Platen, arrived on the opposite bank. That officer immediately ordered pontoons to be thrown across the river; and, in the mean time, directed the battalion of the grenadiers of Arnim to pass it in boats.

While these lesser enterprizes were proceeding, Lieutenant-General Prince Dolgorucki was detached from the Russian army in Silesia, to Colberg, with a body of forces equal in number and equipment to the Prussian detachment under General Platen, which had been appointed to the relief of that place. The Prince proceeded in a direct line to Arenswald, and forced on his troops, by marches of greater length than those of the Prussian general.

Platen took his line of march from Landsberg to Colberg, by the way of Regenwalde: General Berg accordingly ordered Suworow to follow him, with three regiments of Hussars and seven regiments of Cossacs, to harrass his flank; in which they effectually succeeded, by driving in his flank parties on the right, and pursuing them almost under the cannon of the Prussian detachment, which was posted on an height: but, though it was by no means

inactive, it could not prevent him from taking two hundred prisoners, dragoons and hussars.

Several days were passed in skirmishing, till Suworow arrived at the river Rega, on whose opposite bank he found the Prince Dolgorucki. He, therefore, returned to General Berg, at Stargard, while Platen continued his march to Colberg. In his way, the Prussian general made an attack at Corlin, where Major Welitsch, with a few hundred men, covered a small magazine. That officer made a very vigorous defence, during several hours, but was at length obliged to yield to superior numbers. He and the troops which survived the engagement, surrendered prisoners of war; and General Platen gave him that honourable reception which his bravery deserved.

General Platen was, however, retarded by various accidents, and could not prevent Prince Dolgorucki from forming a junction with Count Romanzow; who had actually received orders from Field-Marshal Butterlin to abandon the blockade, and to go into winter quarters, on account of the advanced state of the season; but, on being strengthened by such a considerable reinforcement, he determined to maintain his position. The King of Prussia, therefore, thought it necessary to detach another corps, under the command of General Schenkendorf.

On the 15th of October, the Russians extended themselves, in different detachments, from the environs of Stargard, along a line of five miles from that town. Lieutenant-Colonel Tekelly was op-

posed to one of these detachments with some squadrons of hussars and Cossacs ; and General Berg charged Suworow with the attack ; Tekelly, therefore, received a reinforcement, and Colonel Medem also hastened to join him with a squadron of the dragoons of Twer.

Before break of day, the Cossacs fell upon a village which was occupied by infantry, and rendered themselves masters of it. The Prussian detachment was in a plain beyond it. The Russians in coming out of a wood, along a very narrow way, were much annoyed by two pieces of the enemy's cannon, but as soon as they could extend themselves, Colonel Medem fell, sword in hand, on the Prussian battalion : Tekelly and Suworow supported him with the light troops ; cut off the left flank of the Prussians, which consisted chiefly of hussars, and having, after a vigorous resistance, driven them into a morass, made prisoners of those who had escaped the sword. In this engagement Suworow and his horse were bemired in the marshy ground, and a dragoon displayed no common zeal and activity in relieving him from the perilous situation.

Towards the conclusion of the combat, General Berg arrived with a large part of his corps. The Russians now returned with their prisoners to Stargard, and Suworow remained with the rear guard. But no sooner had they begun their march, than several parties of the enemies troops were seen advancing from the hills against them, led on by the regiment of Finkenstein. Suworow had with him about sixty Cossacs, with whom he instantly feiz-

ed a squadron of hussars which immediately preceded him. With this handful of troops he ventured to attack the enemy's dragoons on the two wings, forced them to give way, and took two field pieces with about twenty men. But as he was soon surrounded by the enemy, there was no possibility of his escaping but by cutting a passage through them ; an effort which was crowned with success. He was under the necessity of leaving the cannon ; but he contrived to carry off his prisoners. Tékelly now rejoined him with some squadrons of hussars and three regiments of Cossacs. On receiving this reinforcement, he renewed the engagement, which lasted an hour. The Prussians lost about a thousand men in killed and prisoners, among whom was the commanding officer, Major Podtscharli.

The Prussians had entrenched themselves near Colberg ; and their number was now augmented to thirty-five thousand men ; but though there was an abundance of provisions in the place, the army could not derive any advantage from that circumstance, as it had so long been in a state of blockade. At the end of October, therefore, General Platen marched to Stettin, with 12,000 men, in order to revictual his army ; leaving behind him a body of troops, amounting to 3000 in Troppau, under the command of General Knobloch. At the same time, in order to oppose his passage, General Berg detached Colonel Schtchetnew with two regiments of cavalry, and some squadrons of hussars and Cossacs, which Count Romanzow enforced with a very considerable detachment.

On the junction of Prince Dolgorucki with Romanzow, the Russian army that blockaded Colberg was equal in number to that of the Prussians, whose object was to relieve it. There were frequent engagements between the advanced posts of the two armies; redoubts and batteries were alternately taken and abandoned; but these partial contests did not bring on any decisive action.

The Russian light troops advanced from the environs of the village of Stargort against General Platen, and the hostile parties approached each other on the near side of the river Rega. General Berg entrusted the command to Colcnel Schtfchetnew, and went himself, on horseback, escorted by two squadions of hussars and as many regiments of Cosslacs, to reconnoitie the Prussians. As he advanced from a wood, by a narrow way, he found the Prussians ready to receive him. It was their left wing which presented itself in this unexpected manner: he, however, turned its flank at full speed, without being incommoded by their field-pieces; but the dragoons pursued him sword in hand. There was, about a quarter of a mile before him, a tract of marshy ground, several hundred paces in breadth, an obstacle which the Russians surmounted with great difficulty. The Prussian dragoons and hussars were close at their heels but no sooner had they passed the morass in their pursuit, than the Russians wheeled about, drove them back into the midst of it, and took a considerable number of them.

The main body of the Russians was still at some distance. To the left of the village, and

about 3 or 400 paces from it, there was an open road, which the regiment of Finkerstein dragoons crossed, and halted on the banks of the river. The Russian and Prussian armies were now separated only by a small hill, and a very narrow hollow way. When the first Prussian squadron presented itself, Suworow, with two hundred hussars, turned them by the hollow way, attacked them sword in hand. He was received with a discharge of their carbines, and the action was warmly contested; but the squadron was at length driven off the field. The platoon firing of some Prussian battalions, who were on the other side of the river, was without effect.

In the mean time, the main body of the Russians advanced: but as night approached the two armies separated, and the Prussians returned to their camp.

After a succession of skirmishes, in which the superior strength of the enemy predominated, Suworow applied to General Fermor, whose headquarters were in the neighbourhood of Arenswald, for a reinforcement, which was accordingly promised to him. As he was on his return to General Berg, he was overtaken by a violent storm, accompanied with heavy rain. He had only two Cossacs with him, and having lost his way, in a thick wood, on the next day came suddenly upon the Prussian camp, which was within three miles of Golnau. Though nothing could be more unexpected by him than such an accident, he availed himself of it to make observations, which on a future occasion were highly useful to him. He,

however, quickly retraced his way to his own corps, which was not more than half a mile from the Prussian army.

He had not changed his clothes, when the Russians proceeded to attack the enemy. In the mean time, Prince Wolgonsky approached with two regiments of cuirassiers, and Lieutenant-General Count Panin was detached with three battalions by General Fermor, who himself followed with a considerable escort.

Towards noon, the advanced guard of General Platen, commanded by Colonel de la Motte Courbiere, moved forward to attack the Russians on a large plain, without wood, and which, from the inundation occasioned by the late storm, had the appearance of a morass. This advanced guard consisted of two battalions, and about ten squadrons of hussars and Bosnian cavalry. The Russian hussars which led the march were immediately defeated by the Prussians, and among many others, Lieutenant-Colonel Fuker was made prisoner by Kipski, the Bosnian commandant. Six squadrons of horse grenadiers followed the hussars.—Suworow overtook them, and placed himself at their head. They had been harassed in their march by the musquetry of the enemy, but had not sustained any considerable loss. At this time, Courbiere had formed his battalions in a square, and the horse grenadiers, instantly forming themselves in lines, attacked it with irresistible impetuosity. The fire of the Prussians was weak and ineffectual, from the humid state of their pieces. They were at length surrounded, and the whole square threw down their arms. Suworow immediately set about rallying his hussars; and, having got them together, and

strengthened them with a party of Cossacs, he fell suddenly upon the Prussian cavalry, who were advancing towards them, and made many prisoners ; among whom was Kipski, the Bosnian commandant. Lieutenant-Colonel Fuker accordingly recovered his liberty.

General Platen, who was not yet in motion, was a quarter of a mile behind his advanced guard. A body of foraging dragoons were in his front ; but Suworow fell upon, and took the greater part of them.

The detachment of Courbiere, which consisted, including the foragers, of near two thousand men, had two hundred killed, and the rest were made prisoners, among whom were forty superior and field officers. The few who escaped were indebted for their preservation to the swiftness of their horses. On the side of the Russians, the hussars suffered the most ; but the horse grenadiers lost no more than fifty men.

The troops that the Count Fermor had detached were yet at a certain distance ; while Generals Berg and Wolgonski remained in a village with their forces. Platen now wheeled about, and marched through the woods to Golnau : but he only passed through the place, where he left a small number of infantry, and formed his camp on the other side of it.

Before day-break the Russians were in motion, and halted on this side the town ; the gate was immediately cannonaded, but it was so strongly bar-

ricadoed as to resist the attack. In consequence of this failure, Panin, at a very early hour of the morning, dispatched his grenadiers, under the conduct of Suworow, and two battalions of fusiliers.

That officer brought his troops at once to the gate, through which, and from the walls, the Prussians kept up a constant fire, by which a captain and some officers were killed. Suworow himself lost his horse, and was some time on foot, while his people were exerting themselves to force the larger gate: but at this moment Lieutenant Taubrin disengaged, with his own hand, a bayonet that fastened the smaller gate on the inside; by which means a passage was opened for the grenadiers, who rushed into the streets, fell upon the garrison, made a great part of it prisoners, and pursued the rest to the bridge on the other side of the town, and in sight of the Prussian camp.— Suworow was hurrying onwards, when some of his troops, who were behind, called upon him to turn back,—and at that moment he found himself alone with Taubrin. It was in this position he received a contusion on his breast from the rebound of a musket-ball, discharged from the other side of the wall; but it did not prove mortal.—He immediately went into a house to bathe his wound with brandy, till the superior aid of a surgeon could be procured.

The Connt Penin had also entered the town with his battalion, so that the Russians were in complete possession of it; but as it had never been their intention to maintain it in the face of Platen's army, they very soon abandoned it.

The Russians now returned, in different bodies, to their respective stations: but Platen proceeded by Damm to Stetten. Berg also marched with the light troops to Treptow, where Knobloch was blockaded with the three thousand men he commanded of the Prussian body of reserve. At his approach, Knobloch surrendered himself prisoner to Count Romanzow. In consequence of that event, Berg returned to Stargard, where he generally fixed his head quarters.

Colonel Medem being obliged, from his bad state of health, to submit to a suspension of his military service, Suworow took upon him the command of the dragoons of Twer.

The Prussians renewed their efforts on the side of Colberg, against the Russians, with strong detachments of observation. General Berg, therefore, immediately began his march with the left column of his forces, and charged Suworow with the conduct of the right, which consisted of three regiments of hussars, two regiments of Cossacs, and the regiment of dragoons of Twer.

He now advanced against Naugarten, where two battalions were posted, with Pomenski's regiment of dragoons. Suworow made his attack in two lines, with intervals, and broke through the dragoons: he then charged the battalion of Prince Ferdinand, killed a considerable number, and took upwards of a hundred prisoners; the greater part of which belonged to the Prince's own company. In this attack, he very narrowly escaped, for the horse he rode was twice wounded by musquet-shot. The

Prussians, however, kept up such a fire from the houses, that the Russians were compelled to retreat, and formed upon a hill to the right. They left many of their comrades behind them; but, the death of the brave Major Erdmann, was a subject of universal regret.

General Platen at length appeared with a considerable convoy of provisions, which he was conducting from Stettin to Colberg. He marched with the main body of the army; so that, though they never quitted him, the Russians found it impossible to make an attempt with any prospect of success.

Suworow had sent thirty dragoons with an officer on a foraging party, at a small distance from Regenwald, who were intercepted by a regiment of Prussian dragoons. He considered them as lost; but, on the next day, the brave officer and his party returned. He had lost only six men, and in revenge had brought several prisoners with him.

It was now the end of November; the season extremely cold, the roads strewed with frozen Prussians. Forced marches had destroyed their clothes, and they were but wretchedly protected against the inclemency of the weather. On the contrary, the Russians were warmly clad, and lost but few of their people.

Platen now approached Colberg; the Russians followed his example, and Suworow took post, with the dragoons of Twer and two other regiments of horse grenadiers, in the left wing of Count Romanzow's army.

On the first of December, Platen took his position on a hill. The Russian cavalry had dismounted in consequence of the cold; when the Prussian artillery began to play upon the flank of the Russians, which compelled the horse grenadiers to retire to a greater distance; though they still remained near the dragoons of Twer, who had not quitted their situation.

The Russians were protected in front by a deep hollow, formed by nature, which was now filled with snow. It was, therefore, impossible for the enemy to attack them; at the same time, they were equally prevented from attacking the enemy. On the other side of the ditch, there was a Prussian redoubt, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Stakelberg, and defended by three companies of grenadiers. The Russians assaulted this redoubt with great spirit, and were for some time repulsed with equal bravery; but, at length, the commandant was defeated and taken prisoner, with a part of his troops and two pieces of cannon.

Platen now endeavoured to introduce his provision-waggons into Colberg, by three different passages, but such a constant fire was employed against him from the Russian entrenchments, that he found it impossible to effect his design. In the evening of the day, when he made this unsuccessful attempt, he retired with all his troops to Trep-tau, and lost a great number of them from the severity of the frost. The two battalions of Schenkendorf, which formed a part of the advanced posts, alone sustained a loss of six hundred men.

Lieutenant-Colonel de Heyde, who commanded in the town of Colberg, not having sufficient provisions for the supply of his garrison, was under the necessity of refusing Prince Eugene of Wurtemberg the quota he demanded ; who accordingly left the place, and formed a junction with Platen. There were now no Prussians before Colberg ; and Prince Eugene having quitted Platen, the latter was left alone to conduct the remains of his army, which had melted down from thirty-five to ten thousand men. With them, however, he bravely maintained his winter-quarters in Saxony.

The Russian light troops skirted the Prussians on their march, and a few slight skirmishes took place in the course of it. When General Platen removed to Stargard, Suworow attacked his rear guard with the dragoons of Twer, but he obtained no advantage, as his cavalry floundered in a morass which was not sufficiently frozen to bear them, and where the enemy's infantry could maintain their ground. He escaped, however, without any considerable loss.

The same night, General Berg threw some grenades into Stargard, at the moment when General Platen had formed the design to abandon it.

On the 16th of December, Colonel de Heyde, surrendered to Count Romanzow, and thus this campaign was brought to a termination.— The latter remained in Pomerania with the light troops, and the Count Fermor, with the rest of the army, fixed his winter quarters on the banks of the Vistula.

On the 16th of March, 1762, the Prince Mollonfski and the Duke of Bevern, governor of Stettin, agreed to an armistice; that was followed by a treaty of peace between Russia and Prussia, which was signed on the 5th of May in the same year.

In the course of the same month, General Berg, accompanied by several of his officers, paid a visit to the Duke of Bevern, and was received with splendid hospitality. A superb entertainment was provided on the occasion, and the evening was enlivened with the dance. On the following morning, the duke accompanied his visitors on horseback through every part of the fortress, and its out-works. He paid particular attention to Suworow, and permitted him to copy a plan of the campaign which was then meditated against Denmark. All the Russian officers remained at Stettin till the next day, when they took leave, highly pleased and flattered by the very polite and hospitable reception of the Duke of Bevern.

Colonel Medium returned to his regiment of Twer, when Suworow received the command of the regiment of dragoons of Archangelgorod.—Although he was attached to the infantry service, Count Romanzow presented him, at the general promotion, as colonel of cavalry, from his superior knowledge in that department of the army; but there were certain obstacles which caused that line of promotion to be abandoned. Soon after, the Count Panin, who commanded in Pomerania, sent him to Petersburg with an account of the return of the troops. On this occasion, he gave him a special letter of recommendation to the Empress, who presented him with a Colonel's commission, written with her own hand.

## CHAP. II.

*SUWOROW IS ADVANCED TO THE RANK OF BRIGADE-MASTER.—CAMPAIGN AGAINST THE CONFEDERATES IN POLAND.*

**I**N the month of August, 1762, Suworow was appointed colonel of the regiment of infantry of Astrachan, which was in garrison at Petersburgh; and when the ceremonial of her coronation called the empress to Moscow, she ordered him to remain at Petersburgh, where she charged him with the execution of some very important commissions. After her return, his regiment was sent to distant service, and was replaced by the infantry regiment of Susdal, consisting of more than a thousand men, of which he received the command in 1763. Suworow employed himself very much in forwarding the new manœuvres, which were introduced into the Russian service at that period; and the empress expressed great satisfaction when she first saw them practised at a review, which she honoured with her presence, in the beginning of the autumn. The officers were permitted to kiss her hand, and every private soldier received a rouble for his particular gratification.

In the autumn of the following year, Colonel Suworow went, with his regiment, into garrison at Ladoga.

In 1765, a camp of exercise, consisting of thirty thousand men, was formed on a large plain before Ksarcoselo. The empress commanded, in person,

the division of St. Petersburg; and the Count Panin commanded that of Finland. Suworow was there, among the light troops, with the first battalion of his regiment; the second battalion, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Ballabin, being appointed to do duty at the head-quarters of her imperial majesty. The camp continued during six days, when the divisions separated, and Suworow's regiment returned to Ladoga.

In 1763, Colonel Suworow was advanced to the rank of brigadier; and, as the war was just commenced against the confederates of Poland, he was ordered to repair, with all speed, to the frontiers of that kingdom, in the course of November, and in the most unfavourable season of the year. In order to habituate his regiment to the fatigues of war, he proceeded from Ladoga to Nowogorod. He passed various bridges, crossed rivers and morasses, whose passage was rendered more difficult by flight frosts, and traversed a thousand versts, or five hundred English miles, in the course of a month. In this extraordinary and fatiguing march, he lost only a few men in the environs of Smolensko.

The body of troops which marched into Poland, consisted of four regiments of infantry, two regiments of cuirassiers, and two brigadiers, under the command in chief of Lieutenant-General Numner. Suworow commanded a brigade. During the winter, he was continually engaged in improving his regiment in their manœuvres, and habituating them to every action that would be required, and every circumstance that might happen, in a state of actual service.

In the following summer of 1769, these troops were stationed on the frontiers of Poland. General Numnér took his route to Orſa, and Brigadier Suworow had preceded him, some days, with the advanced guard. It was composed of a squadron of cuirassiers, a squadron of dragoons, and his own regiment of Susdal. He had distributed the whole into four battalions ; one of grenadiers, another of tirailleurs, and two of fusileers. They remained for some weeks in an entrenched camp, before Orſa, and then proceeded on their march to Minski, the advanced guard being conducted by Suworow. On his arrival in that country, he extinguished on their first appearance, the disturbances that threatened it. He did not, however, remain there for any length of time, but was dispatched in great haste to Warsaw with his regiment, and two squadrons of dragoons ; and to facilitate the march, he distributed his corps into two columns. All his infantry was conveyed on farmer's waggons, with bayonets fixed, that they might be prepared for any sudden attack. One half of the dragoons, in order to save their horses, went alternately in the waggons, and the other half led the horses of their comrades. Thus they travelled, and in twelve days arrived in the suburbs of Praga, on the other side of Warsaw.

In his march, Suworow crossed Lithuania, where he appeased the discontents of the people. The Hulan regiments of Peliak and Korsiyki being encamped in the environs of Brzescia, he surprised them during the night, by levelling a cannon, which had been escorted by a company of infantry, against the door of the principal officer's quarters. The rest of the troops remained as a body of reserve,

and the business was completed without effusion of blood. The two chiefs, with their officers and squadrons, gave a written engagement never more to take up arms against the Russians, and immediately abandoned the confederacy.

General Weimarn being appointed to the principal command in Poland, he ordered Brigadier Suworow to attend him secretly in the night, and informed him that very great uneasiness prevailed throughout the city of Warsaw, which were occasioned by the march of the rebel Marshal Kotelupowksi, who was advancing with eight thousand men, as well by land as on the Vistula.—Suworow immediately collected a company of grenadiers, a squadron of dragoons, fifty light troops, and some Cossacs, with one piece of artillery, and proceeded up the left bank of the Vistula ; and when he had advanced about a mile, he crossed the river, at a place where it was not of any great depth, to meet Kotelupowksi ; whom he completely routed, and made several prisoners. From the latter he endeavoured to discover the real number of the confederates, as well as the detachments of their troops, the places where they were stationed, and the names of their chiefs.

In the course of a few weeks it was known, that the two Marshals Pulawski, as well as others of equal rank, were in Lithuania with ten thousand confederates. Suworow, accordingly, put himself in motion with a detachment, composed of one company of grenadiers, two companies of fusileers, a light battalion of tirailleurs, a squadron of dragoons, fifty Cossacs, and two pieces of cannon. By

forced marches he arrived at Brzescia, where he received a confirmation of the preceding intelligence.

The confederates were closely followed by Colonel Roenne, with two thousand men, and by Lieutenant-Colonel Drewiz, with fifteen hundred.—Under these circumstances, Suworow did not make any stay at Brzescia ; he only entered it to station a part of his troops there, in order to maintain the post, and was not prevented by the night from proceeding with the remainder. In the morning they fell in with a patrole of fifty carabineers, which Colonel Roenne had sent out on a reconnoitring party, under the command of Count Gastelli, captain of cavalry, and they took this patrole along with them.

About noon, and after a march of three miles, this small detachment discovered the confederates : they consisted of cavalry alone, and were stationed in the depth of a wood. Suworow, accordingly, proceeded by two defiles, till he came to a morass, with a bridge that was covered by a battery of the enemy, containing two cannons ; which was all the artillery the confederates possessed. The column of infantry passed the bridge with great rapidity ; and sustained some loss from the fire which was directed at it ; when, having the wood in their rear, they found themselves, in a moment, in the front of the enemy's lines, which presented themselves in a semi-circular form on an open plain. This spot was the centre of the confederate army, so that the Russians were, in a great measure, surrounded. Suworow, at the head of fifty dragoons,

instantly rushed upon the battery, but, not being supported by his people, was in a situation of great danger; while the confederates, instead of employing their cannon in defending it, had drawn them behind their lines, as it appeared, with a view to preserve them, and they succeeded. They, however, instantly attacked the Russian infantry in front, with the greater part of their squadron; the former, however, defended themselves with distinguished bravery, and being very expert in the use of the firelock, dealt destruction around them: at length, after a very severe contest, the confederates were forced to give way. They returned, however, four times to the charge, with fresh squadrons, and were as often compelled to fly from the galling power of the Russian musquetry. The Count Castelli, with the carabineers, pursued them in their successive retreats, and put a great number to the sword. He was also attacked, in his turn, by the elder Pulawski, the senior marshal of the confederates, who received a pistol shot in the encounter, of which he died on the following day.

The Cossacs were scattered in small parties on the rear of the Russian troops, which could not be attacked, as it was completely protected by the wood; and the confederates did not attempt to dismount, and continue the engagement on foot. Nevertheless, the major on duty frequently exclaimed, that they were cut off: for which ill-founded alarm, Suworow ordered him to be put under immediate arrest.

The night was now approaching; and the confederates had formed their lines in front of the vil-

lage of Orzechoba ; which, by discharging grenades from a howitzer, was soon set on fire ; and, the infantry seizing the moment of alarm to attack the enemy with bayonets fixed, they fled in great disorder through the flames of the village. Suworow ordered his small body of cavalry to follow them. In the pursuit, they met Pinski's regiment of dragoons, which consisted of only one hundred men, who instantly dismounted, in order to continue the engagement with advantage, from behind the hedges ; but the greater part of them were either cut in pieces, or made prisoners of war. The confederates made some attempts to renew the engagement, but Suworow having ordered a constant fire to be kept up in the wood, whose echoes might deceive them as to the number of his troops, they soon wheeled about, and left him master of the field. They lost on this occasion about a thousand men, among whom were several officers ; with a hundred prisoners, who were immediately sent off to Warsaw. This body of confederates did not amount to more than half the number which had been originally reported.

Suworow now took his route to Lublin, and ordered the troops, which he had left at Brzescia, to follow him.

Lublin is a central point of Poland and Lithuania. This circumstance determined the brigadier to fix on this town as a proper place for establishing his cantonment, though it was not capable of being defended. It possessed a long extent of walls, which were in a very ruinous state, and an old castle, that had often been besieged, and taken by Peter

the First, Charles the Twelfth, and the Kings Augustus and Stanislaus; nor had since received any reparation. Suworow seized upon the small towns in the vicinity of Lublin, several of which were defended by fortifications. After some time, he established communications with Cracow, and Sandomir, a place of some strength. He occasionally placed a garrison in Opatow, which is also on the other side of the Vistula; but he made Lublin the depot of his artillery, stores, and magazines; and from thence sent out his parties, as circumstances might require. He was continually passing the Vistula, to Pulava, to Urschentowa, to Zawitsch-vost, as well as to Sandimir; and maintained his position during the time of his abode in Poland, which occupied a space of near three years.

His corps was soon reinforced by that part of his regiment of Sundal, which he had left at Praga, as well as by two companies of the grenadiers of Narva, and an equal number of the regiment of carabiniers of Petersburg, and of the third regiment of cuirassieurs; but he had not more than a hundred Cossacs.

The Russian army in Poland required the establishment of four major-generals, and Suworow was accordingly advanced to that rank, on the first of January, 1770.

We shall pass over the many slight engagements which took place in the course of this year, and only dwell upon such as were distinguished by circumstances which demand a particular description. In the month of April, Major-General Suworow

passed the Vistula at Zawischwost, in search of Colonel Noschinski, of Sandimir. He took with him on this occasion, two companies of fusileers, two squadrons of carabineers, fifty Cossacs, and two field pieces: and the Colonel being at Clementow, he directed his march to that place. As this small detachment was passing a village in the night, the report of a carbine, which was accidentally discharged, brought out some peasants from their cottages, who were immediately employed as guides by the Russian troops, and discovered to them that they were close upon the confederates, whom they imagined to be at a considerable distance.

They accordingly fell in with the enemy at day-break, who were already on horseback to receive them. They consisted of about a thousand men, had taken their position on a plain by the side of a wood, and their squadrons were formed in small squares. Suworow advanced against them with the carabineers, who, notwithstanding his orders to the contrary, discharged their pieces, and immediately halted: the confederate troops, however, received the fire with a steady composure. He then ordered the infantry to advance with all possible speed, and, after a discharge of musquetry, they rushed on with their bayonets. But the enemy, for some time, kept up a very smart fire with six field-pieces, and then retreated: and though they continued to defend themselves, the cavalry pursued them with great slaughter. During the engagement, the major-general ordered a party to take possession of Clementow; and the confederates dispersed themselves in the wood. They lost all their artillery, with near three hundred men; while

the Russians did not lose more than a sixth part of that number.

In the middle of the summer, when Colonel Moschinski had received a reinforcement, Suworow gained a second victory over him at Opatow, killed a hundred of his men, and made as many prisoners, the greater part of which had been wounded in the engagement.

In the course of the autumn, Major-General Suworow attempted an operation on the Vistula, but, from the rapidity of the current, he missed the pontoon, in leaping from the bank, and, falling into the river, was in great danger of being drowned. After many fruitless attempts to save him, a grenadier seized a lock of his hair, and drew him to the bank ; but in getting out of the water, he struck his breast against a pontoon, which caused a violent contusion that threatened his life ; and from which he did not recover for several months.

Towards the end of the year, the empress graciously sent him the order of Saint Anne.

In the month of March, 1771, Suworow left Libnin with four companies of infantry, three squadrons of carabineers, about a hundred Cossacs, and some field pieces, and passed the Vistula, near Sandomir. In his march to Cracow, he was successful in several small engagements, and at length attacked Landskroon, a town about four miles distant from that city. Here he experienced a very vigorous resistance ; and though he soon made himself master of the place, he found it impracticable to take the castle. The Russians suffered greatly both in killed

and wounded, from the musquetry of the confederates. The general himself appears to have been in great danger, as his hat and coat were pierced with bullets. On his retiring to repose himself in a neighbouring village, he was attacked by the confederate General Schutz. The contest was but of short duration, and after some loss on both sides, Schutz thought it prudent to retreat.

While General Suworow was absent from Lublin, a considerable number of the confederates had assembled in that canton where Colonel Stakelberg then commanded. He, therefore, returned thither by forced marches, and, in his way, took the small town of Casimir. The cavalry entered first, and immediately routed the greater part of the confederates who occupied it; while many of them fled and hid themselves. On the arrival of the infantry, an immediate search was made after them; and the general having ordered them, for that purpose, to distribute themselves in all the streets; so it happened, that he was entirely left alone. At this moment perceiving in a large barn, a party of cavalry who had fled, he addressed them in a friendly manner, promised them a pardon, and ordered them to come forth. The commanding officer immediately quitted the building, and his people followed him on foot, leading their horses, but unfortunately some Cossacs arriving at the spot, one of them discharged a pistol at the Poles, who immediately fired at the offender, but without manifesting the least intention to hurt Suworow, and retired into the barn, where they enclosed themselves. The general ordered it to be instantly invested, and threatened to burn it, if they did not surrender them-

elves. Alarmed at the menace, they immediately submitted. It was the first and finest squadron of Marshal Saba, consisting of fifty men. In this unexpected attack, a hundred Poles were killed, and three hundred taken prisoners.

It was not easy to decide whether it would have been a prudent measure, at this time, to attack Marshal Pulawski, with whom Saba, with a considerable body of troops, had just formed a junction; especially as the Russians were so charged with prisoners; but Suworow had learned the art of applying his measures to the circumstances around him: he accordingly ordered the infantry to advance to the attack. They were no more than five miles from Krasnik, which was actually besieged by the confederates, and was gallantly defended by three companies of the Sudsal regiment. However, on the arrival of Suworow, the confederates dispersed themselves in the woods, and he did not think it necessary to attempt an engagement with them.

Suworow had not been long returned to Lublin, when he was informed by General Weimar, that the confederates were taking positions round Cracow, and that they contrived to cut off his convoys of provisions, though he had a strong Russian garrison in the place.

Accordingly, in the middle of May, the general put himself in motion, with four companies of grenadiers, a battalion of fusileers, eight field-pieces and mortars, five squadrons of carabineers, and eighty Cossacs. He halted upon the left bank of

the Vistula, but made no attempt to pass it. In this position it seldom happened that a day passed without being engaged with parties of confederates, which were sometimes very numerous. On approaching the river Duneyetz, Suworow found the confederates in considerable force. Accordingly, he thought it necessary to form a battery for the purpose of commanding a passage; but as the river was deep and the Russians were not furnished with pontoons, the grenadiers who first attempted to pass it, found themselves up to their necks in the water: Colonel Tschepelow, however, discovered a ford at a very small distance, and he conducted the cavalry over it, under the protection of the battery. He immediately attacked the advanced posts, the infantry followed him, and the confederates sustained a very heavy loss. Some squadrons of the enemy's dragoons had posted themselves on the mines of Belitscha, and at first made some resistance, but when the infantry arrived, they retired to the neighbourhood of Cracow.

Towards noon General Suworow proceeded to that city, where Colonel Drewiz commanded a regiment of Tschugujewski, a regiment of the Don Cossacs, four companies of infantry, and as many of carabineers. As night approached, this body of troops marched to Tynez, a fortified town at the distance of a mile from Cracow. Drewiz was ordered to push forward, when he fell in with a numerous body of confederate cavalry, who were enjoying the sweets of sleep, nor did he disturb them; but by the time the general arrived, they were all mounted, and at the moment of their departure. He immediately ordered the two first

companies of grenadiers to make an assault upon a redoubt, defended by a hundred men, and two pieces of cannon. They soon got possession of it with small loss, and put almost all the garrison to the sword: but could only bring off one piece of artillery.

Here Suworow remained, and did not make an assault upon Tynez, which was too well fortified to justify such a proceeding. On the following day, he marched to Landskron, and drew up his troops on the heights before the town, in order of battle, when a very smart skirmish immediately followed. The confederates, to the number of four thousand, had their left wing supported by Landskron, and their right extended to the left of the Russians. In their front were a hundred and fifty chasseurs, commanded by a French officer, and at the distance of a quarter of a mile there was some very rough ground. Suworow ordered the Cossacs of Tschugujewski to charge the chasseurs, and Colonel Tschepetow, with a squadron of carabineers, to support them. The Cossacs immediately flew to the attack, and a considerable part of the chasseurs were left dead on the field. The action was on the point of becoming general, when the confederates began to give way: their right wing was the first to retreat, and the Russian cavalry pursued them for upwards of a mile, towards Biala, on the frontiers of Silesia. Five hundred men lost their lives on this occasion, among whom were the Marshal Orzescha of Lithuania, and the Prince Sapieha, of Great Poland. The Russians made two hundred prisoners, and Marshal Loslozki, of Warsaw, and Miamzinski, were of the number. The French

Brigadier-General Dumourier, (since become so notorious, from his conduct in the early campaigns of the present war) was at the head of the confederates on this occasion ; but soon quitted them, and returned to France.

After this engagement, General Suworow retained the Don Cossacs of Drewiz in his service, and set off on his return to Lublin. As he approached the little river Son, he passed near a wood, from whence he received a very brisk fire ; but continued his route without returning it. Soon after, he met a part of the Warsaw confederates, consisting of five hundred dragoons and hussars. They charged the Russian cavalry with great bravery, but were received sword in hand, and, after a vigorous resistance, with some loss on both sides, were finally repulsed.

During this time, Pulawski, with two thousand men, had rendered himself master of Zamoscie ; from whence Suworow resolved to dislodge him. The Polish marshal, however, did not wait for his arrival, but came out of the town to give him battle : but his troops were scarcely formed, when the Russian cavalry and Cossacs fell unexpectedly upon them, and, after some resistance, put them to the rout ; with the loss of two hundred killed, and as many prisoners, among whom were eight officers. The general now returned to Lublin.

At this period, the empress conferred on Major-General Suworow the Order of Saint George, of the third class, as a testimony of the satisfaction she had received from his services.

The outermost post on the left wing of the garrison was at Sokal, on the river Bug, and consisted of some fusileers, with two corporals, and half a squadron of dragoons, under the command of a lieutenant named Wedeniapin. Some time before, Suworow had presented him with a piece of artillery that had been taken from the Poles ; and he instantly thought himself a great commander. He accordingly opened his campiagn without orders, and marched by Lemberg to the small town of Tomorloff, where he commanded—his dinner ; but before he could complete the important service of eating it, he was surprized by some inhospitable confederates, led on by Colonel Noviski ; and instead of attacking his soup, he was obliged to defend himself. Though some of the dragoons cut their way through the enemy, the greater part of his infantry were made mince-meat, and the rest, to the number of fifteen, surrendered as prisoners, and their gallant commander along with them.

About a month afterwards, Noviski, with a superb detachment of cavalry, consisting of a thousand men, marched to Krasnik, which was at no great distance from the place where Suworow then was. At that time, the latter had sent several parties into Lithuania and Poland, as he frequently did, to prevent the confederates from reinforcing themselves ; so that he had but a very small force with him.

On receiving intelligence of Noviski's approach, Suworow immediately detached two companies of infantry, with two field pieces, a squadron of carabiners, and some Cossacs, under the command of

a field-officer. It was his wish to have entrusted this business to Bhergotz, a captain of cavalry, and the only partisan who was then with him ; but he was not to be found at the moment when he was wanted. The field-officer, therefore, marched against Noviski, but not thinking himself sufficiently strong, he turned aside, and did not choose to risk an engagement.

Noviski proceeded towards Krasnastow, where there was a squadron of cuirassiers, with a company of fusileers, and some Cossacs. Suworow detached some squadrons of cavalry to harass him on his route, and then went himself, with six Cossacs, and some officers, to join the field-officer who has been already mentioned ; and, as soon as it was night, he sent Bestuschow, with a Cossac, to make enquiries in a neighbouring chateau. Noviski was actually there with a part of his people ; but the master of the place saved Bestuschow, by letting him through a garden-gate, without being perceived ; and the latter hastened to a part of the wood which had been appointed, in order to make his report.

About midnight, the general entered Krasnastow, where he found the troops which he had already dispatched there ; and, having got together all his people who had been cantoned in that place, with a twelve pounder, he instantly departed.

Noviski had now posted himself in a wood, about four miles to the right of Krasnastow ; and, about noon, the Russians came up with him ; when Suworow, passing the bridge of a mill, at the head

of his dragoons, began the attack. The confederates defended themselves with great bravery ; but, after a vigorous resistance, were dispersed and pursued.

The Russian general returned by Krasnóstow to Lublin, and Noviski went back to Biala. A party of the confederates fell in with Kitriow, a Russian officer of dragoons, who, having been wounded in the late action, was now returning on a waggon ; but the Poles suffered him and his small escort to pass on without interruption.

In the beginning of the month of August, the famous Kosakowska, one of the confederates who had taken refuge in Hungary, arrived in Lithuania, and, by his extraordinary talents and exertions, threw the duchy into a flame. He had collected a large body of recruits, and had excited the regular troops to revolt and join the confederation.

The Count Orginski, grand marshal of Lithuania, came from Warsaw, in order to take the command. At the same time Kosakowski published manifestoes, admirably calculated to influence the people to whom they were addressed ; and, though he conferred the title of marshal on others, according to his good pleasure, he appeared to consider himself in these papers, as nothing more than a common citizen of Lithuania. He clothed the troops which he had just raised, in a black uniform.

The Colonels Turing and Drewiz were detached against this new confederation in Lithuania with upwards of two thousand men, and a sufficient ar-

tillery equipment. A Russian corps had also arrived, under the command of General Kafchin, which was appointed to cover the frontiers of Lithuania. The Petersburg legion was also cantoned by battalions in that duchy. One of them, however, commanded by Colonel Abutchef, was surprised by the army of Lithuania ; and, after a very brave defence, was obliged to surrender. This battalion consisted of five hundred men, with fifteen officers, and two pieces of cannon. The Count Ogynski received the officers at his own table, permitted them to retain their swords, and indulged them to be on their parole.

The loss of this battalion soon reached General Suworow, at Lublin ; and he immediately began his march with two companies of grenadiers, an equal number of fusileers, a squadron of carabineers, and fifty Cossacs. With this small body of troops, and with only two Licornes, he proceeded by Kozk to Biala, in Lithuania. He there reinforced himself with the legion of Petersburg, commanded by Colonel Gaerner, one squadron of cuirassiers, and another of dragoons, with two grenadier and fusileer companies, and fifty Cossacs ; the whole of which did not exceed a thousand men. With this force he immediately proceeded to penetrate into the heart of Lithuania.

Towards the close of the third day, he received accounts that the confederates were not more than four miles from him, in a very advantageous post before Stalowiz. He well knew that he could depend upon his troops, who were inured to war, with all the fatigue and dangers attendant upon it.

In the evening, therefore, they began their march, without beat of drum, and the infantry formed the advanced guard. It was a woody country through which they were to pass ; the sky was covered with clouds, the night uncommonly dark, and, during a great part of it, they had no other guide but a light, which glimmered from the turret of a convent near the town of Stalowiz. When they were about half way, the patroles took four hulans prisoners, who served as guides for the remainder of it.

As it is an open country immediately round Stalowiz, General Suworow, when he was within half a mile of the place, ranged his troops in lines. On the first, was the company of grenadiers distributed on the wings ; near it were the companies of the Petersburg legion, and, behind it, was the company of the fusileers of Nassebourg : the two Licornes were in the centre. The second line was composed of three squadrons of cavalry. The body of reserve formed the last, and consisted of a company of fusileers of Susdal, and two platoons of cavalry, who, with some Coffacs, were distributed in the wings.

The Russians proceeded till they found themselves by chance on the very back of the confederates, who were covered by a marsh, through which run a dyke, of about two hundred yards in length, which they approached in close ranks, and with the most cautious silence. Backul, with his detachment, cut down the advanced sentinels ; but his corps was, nevertheless, discovered by the enemy, and received with a very brisk fire, both of

artillery and musquetry. The grenadier company of Susdal, commanded by Major Kifelow, was forced to break the enemy's centre, by falling instantly upon it ; and, though it was in a movement of great danger, and accompanied with some loss, it was crowned with success. Three squadrons rushed into the opening that had been made, and employed their sabres on all sides with a most destructive power. The rest of the infantry soon came up, and the confederates being thrown into disorder, which was greatly increased by the obscurity of the night, were entirely routed and pursued into the town. Annibal ventured to conduct the Licornes across the morass, but they sunk in the mire, and the Russians were left without artillery. Captain Schuffel, with the company of Nassebourg, attacked three hundred janissaries, belonging to the grand marshal, in the town : they defended themselves with great spirit from the houses ; but, being reinforced by a company of grenadiers, he soon disposed of the greater part of them.

General Suworow was in the town as soon as it was light, and perceiving a man running towards a house, whom he imagined to be one of his own people on a scheme of pillage, he called him back ; when the man returned an answer in the Polish language ; and instantly discharged his piece at him, but without effect. He proved to be one of the janissaries of the grand marshal.

In the heat of the attack, the infantry had scattered itself over the town, and before it could form, Schibulin arrived with the reserved corps. The Russians, therefore, were masters of the town.

The five hundred men, of the legion of Petersburg, which had been made prisoners, a short time before, were lodged in some houses on the market place, whose doors were barricadoed ; but they soon leaped from their windows and recovered their liberty.

The Russian cavalry had obtained every advantage in the open country ; and, as soon as it was broad day-light, the infantry marched out of the town and attacked that of the grand marshal. This engagement, which promised to be decisive, was bravely contested by the hostile parties : at length, the Russian fusileers made an attempt with the bayonet fixed ; the rest of the infantry followed their example ; and after a vigorous resistance, the enemy's whole line gave way ; but, being very numerous, they retreated in good order.

The Russian cavalry continued to gain ground, when general Beliak, at the head of a thousand hulans, made a very vigorous attack ; many a Russian soldier was laid low by it, and several officers wounded ; but, at length, after a very severe contest, Beliak lost the day. On this occasion, the Cossacs distinguished themselves by a courage and activity that nothing could resist.

The army of Lithuania retreated to a small distance from the field of battle ; and, Suworow, having reformed his lines and reposèd for an hour, made necessary dispositions to march to Slomin, about four miles from the scene of his victory. From his numerous prisoners, and the five hundred men of the Petersburg legion, who had recovered

their liberty, but principally from the great number of equipages and waggons, &c. which had been taken, the train of Suworow's army formed a line of half a mile in length. The booty was very considerable, and the soldiers divided no small quantity of gold and silver. The military chest, which had been concealed for some days by the curate of the town, was at length discovered in his house, and was found to contain thirty thousand ducats. In the evening, the troops approached Slomin; and, on the morrow, the general gave an entertainment to the field and other officers of rank who were his prisoners. Colonel Turing, who was in the neighbourhood, came to offer his congratulations, but brought no reinforcements with him.

The whole of the Russian force on this occasion was from eight to nine hundred men; of these, fourscore were left dead on the field; and, one-half of those who survived were in a wounded condition. The army of Lithuania, which consisted of near five thousand men, lost one thousand by the sword, and seven hundred prisoners, among whom were thirty field and other officers of rank, and the commanding general of the day. All the artillery of the confederates, which consisted of twelve pieces of cannon, fell into the hands of the Russians, as well as several standards, with the baton of command, and other insignia of the grand marshall. The dragoons of Lithuania, who had not time to mount their horses, lost the greater part of them, and they served to mount the Russian infantry on their return. General Suworow gave a rouble, from his own private purse, to every soldier who had been engaged in this action.

Soon after this important battle, the empress sent him, as conqueror of the grand marshal, the Order of Alexander Newsky, accompanied with the following dispatch :—

*To Major-General de Suworow.*

“ In recompense for the services which you have  
“ rendered to us, as well as to your country, by  
“ the entire defeat of the Count Oginsky, chief of  
“ the Lithuanians, who have revolted against our  
“ troops, it has pleased us to name you Knight of  
“ our Order of Alexander Newsky, whose deco-  
“ ration we send you, and which we ordain you  
“ to take and wear. We hope that these distin-  
“ guished testimonies of our imperial benevolence  
“ towards you will serve to cherish your zeal, and  
“ that you will consecrate your days to the advance-  
“ ment of our service. In that expectation, we  
“ assure you of the imperial esteem of your affec-  
“ tionate,

*Petersburg.  
December 20, 1771.*

“ CATHERINE.”

General Suworow was no sooner returned to Slomin, than he prepared, with the utmost impatience to set out on fresh expeditions : leaving therefore his prisoners and heavy artillery within the walls of the town, he did not wait for returning day, but began his march in the middle of the night. He accordingly proceeded to Pinsk in order to complete the dispersion of the confederates ; and had to pass through a marshy country whose roads

were rendered almost impassable, by the rains which had lately fallen. On his way he met an officer of the confederates, who was charged with conveying the strong box of his regiment, which had been well replenished with ducats ; and he instantly gave him a passport for himself and the treasure to the place of his destination.

He now published a declaration to the confederates, that if they would remain tranquil, he would not attack them ; and they immediately separated. General Beliak, who was next in rank to Count Oginsky, whom the chagrin, occasioned by the loss of the battle of Stalowiz, had induced to make a journey to Danzick, refused to take the command of the confederate troops. He excused himself on account of his engagement with Suworow to undertake no enterprize whatever against the Russians ; nor would he have remained till that time in his cantonments but in obedience to the orders of the grand marshal. Grabowski, who was stationed nearest to the Russian frontiers on the side of Smolensko, and had raised many thousand men, dismissed his people ; and several chiefs followed his example.

There were at Pinsk many persons who belonged to the suite of Count Oginsky, whom the marshal had not taken with him to the field ; while some of his people had fled for refuge to the small islands in the neighbourhood of that place. They were all treated, by Suworow's order, with a protecting attention, and he took particular care, that the possessions of the marshal should not receive the least injury. He then marched to Brzescie, where he

took some prisoners whom he left at Biala ; and on his happy return to Lublin, he ordered *Te Deum* to be sung, and celebrated his victory with the accustomed ceremonies.

In the posthumous works of Frederic the Great, we read a most flattering eulogium on the subject of this important victory, which was obtained on the 11th of September, 1771. In speaking of the battle of Stalowiz, his Prussian majesty counsels the Poles never to hazard, a second time, a contest with Suworow.

Towards the end of the year there were some engagements in the Palatinate of Rava, between Sabrowski, a colonel in the service of the confederates, who commanded four or five hundred men, and Major-General Prince Gallitzin, who entirely routed them. When Sabrowski was on the other side of Pulawa, he was surprised by the Captain Archipafflow, with the party he commanded : he was very ill-treated, and made prisoner with three officers and forty men. He had scarce surrendered himself when a chasseur, who was not observed, wounded him in the breast by a musket shot. He was a very gallant man, and universally regretted ; for he died in a few days, notwithstanding every means were employed by General Suworow to promote his cure at Pulawa. As a mark of his esteem for the brave colonel, he restored to their liberty the three officers who were made prisoners with him.

Towards the latter end of January, 1772, a commissary belonging to the Russian troops entreated a secret audience of the general; when he discovered to him, that the French Field-Marshal Viomenil, who succeeded brigadier Dumourier, had proposed a plan to take the castle and city of Cracow by surprise, which had been approved and adopted by the general of the confederates at Biala. To prove the truth of what he had advanced, he produced a letter from his brother, who was attached to the confederation; and he employed every argument in his power to dissuade the General from an expedition he had commenced against Lithuania, to oppose the invasion of the confederates, which he represented as nothing more than a diversion to draw his attention from Cracow. The general, however, gave not the least credit to the commissary's information or opinion; and he acted wrong; for he actually lost several days, which were employed in a fruitless march to Lithuania.

He was no sooner returned to Lublin, than he instantly collected two squadrons of dragoons, with some Cossacs, and two companies of infantry with field pieces, and began his march for Cracow. Near Koeliz, in the palatinate of Sandomer, he met General Count Braniski, with four regiments of hulans, and Lieutenant-General Grabowski, who served under him, with the Lithuanian regiment of dragoon guards. He immediately formed a junction; and, taking with him the garrison of Koeliz, which consisted of one squadron, two companies, and fifty Cossacs, they proceeded directly to Cracow.

Lieutenant-General Bibikow, who had, some months since, been appointed to succeed General Weirnarn, at Warsaw, had established at Cracow a large part of the regiment of Susdal, under the command of Colonel Stakelberg. This officer, who made, at Colberg, such a brave defence, had not of late manifested the same resolution. At the entreaty of a lady of quality he withdrew a sentinel, who was posted before the common sewer of the castle, because the challenges, &c. which were repeated during the night, near the lady's house, disturbed her slumbers. He contented himself with keeping up a piquet of thirty men and an officer in the castle, where the artillery and regimental carriages were deposited. The rest of the guard was composed of workmen without arms, and amounted to about a hundred men.

The confederates were informed of the defenceless state of the castle and its feeble garrison: they also knew that the sentinel had been withdrawn. Accordingly, in the night of the second of February, they made their approaches to it, in profound silence, with two battalions well armed, who were followed, at a certain distance, by five hundred cavalry. The infantry wore their white shirts over their uniforms, that they might not be observed amidst the snow; and, creeping upon their hands and knees, they penetrated the sewer, and by that passage entered the castle, with Captain Viomenil, nephew of the general of that name, at their head. The small piquet made all the resistance in their power; but the men who composed it were either cut down or taken prisoners. The cavalry soon followed and entered the castle by a gate whose

port-cullis the infantry had drawn up. Colonel Stakelberg got together, in great haste, a body of troops, and attacked the castle, but was repulsed with some loss, and the confederates remained masters of it.

In the course of the following night, Suworow arrived before Cracow, and immediately entered it. At break of day, a heavy column of the confederates sallied forth from the castle into the principal street of the town ; it supported itself with great courage amidst a continual fire of small arms ; but, after losing a great number of men, was driven back. Fifty dragoons, led on by an officer with great ardour, made an attack upon the grand guard, who received them with bayonets fixed ; but the greater number of them were killed, and after a contest of two hours, they were repulsed with the loss of a hundred men.

The same day Suworow made the circuit of Cracow on horseback, accompanied by two Polish generals. The Polish troops, commanded by Branicki, preserved their position on the other side of the Vistula, and were in possession of a bridge of communication, which was well protected by a body of infantry.

The castle of Cracow is situated on an eminence, but has neither ramparts or fortifications, and is without any defence but a thick and very high wall, with a ditch beneath. It is supported by the walls of the town which it commands. Troops were stationed in the upper stories and garrets of several houses in the front of the castle, and cannon were

placed in such a manner as to be discharged from the windows. In the vacant parts of the town, entrenchments were thrown up, and parapets and redoubts were erected. General Suworow then sent for the ancient Commandant Ocbeschewitz, as a very experienced person, with the chasseurs which he had clothed at his own expence, and confided to his care the principal quarter of the city. The remaining part of it was entrusted to the vigilance of three field-officers.

Thus the castle was completely blockaded. The Russians, without reckoning their horse, had about eight hundred infantry ; and the troops of the confederates in the castle consisted of four hundred infantry, and five hundred cavalry.

On the third day, the commandant of the castle dispatched a French officer to the Russian general, who was charged with the following propositions :

I. He offered to give up a hundred prisoners, who were chiefly workmen of different kinds, and who inhabited the castle before the blockade ; but this proposal was not accepted.

II. He demanded that permission might be given to the canons who officiated in the church, which was the burying-place of the Kings of Poland, to retire into the city, with their attendants, amounting, in all, to eighty persons. This request was also refused, in order to increase the distress of the garrison by so many useless mouths. But notwithstanding this refusal, the ecclesiastics quitted the castle, at two different times. Those who made the

first escape were only fired upon with powder, but the second party were more seriously treated, and some of them were wounded. No farther attempts therefore, were made of a similar nature.

III. The officer also demanded certain medicines ; which were immediately granted.

The castle was furnished with a plentiful magazine of provisions. There was a sufficiency of hay and corn, as well as of wine, brandy, salt, oil, and roots. It possessed also a spring of excellent water ; but there was a dearth of meat.

The besiegers themselves were, in some degree, blockaded in the town, by the numerous bodies of confederates who occupied the country, and against whom parties were continually employed. The general, therefore, had the precaution to examine into the state of their provisions and forage ; and he found that they had an adequate supply of both.

Soon after the sally, which has been already mentioned, the besieged attempted a second, with four or five hundred men, who were conducted by a French officer ; but were repulsed with the loss of fifty of their people.

Bakalowitz, the king's engineer, a man of consummate experience, began to form a mine, at a hundred paces from the castle, in very stony ground. Count Branizki provided him, for the purpose of opening the first gallery, fifty excellent labourers, from the salt-pits of Willitscha ; and, in a short time, a second was begun, to the left of the former.

General Suworow, by the advice of Count Branizki, had posted the best company of the regiment of Sudsal in a building, in the immediate vicinity of the castle. At noon the general had retired to take a short repose, when he was soon disturbed by a great and tumultuous noise ; he, therefore, rose in an instant, mounted his horse, and hastened to discover the cause. It was this company, whose captain having been seized with a panic, were flying in great disorder, and were pursued by the enemy with great slaughter. The general exerted himself to the utmost to stop the run-a-ways, and, having rallied them, forced them back with bayonets fixed, upon the confederates, who soon retired. The Russians, on this unfortunate occasion, lost thirty men.

In case it should have been found necessary to raise the siege ; all the captains were made responsible for the fidelity and safety of the inhabitants. The suburbs were subject to a similar regulation ; and that part of the town which was inhabited by the Jews received orders to arm, and mount guard. Redoubts were also raised upon the high-roads.

General Branizki recommended an assault, and his project was adopted. On the third of March, at two hours after midnight, the artillery, which were levelled from some very solid edifices, near the castle, began a discharge of small shot, accompanied by a brisk fire of musquetry, which the confederates returned with equal spirit. The columns advanced, and various attempts were made, but without effect. In short, the assault failed, and, at break of day, the signal was given for a retreat. The

Russians lost, in this unsuccessful business, a lieutenant-colonel, several officers, and forty soldiers; and the wounded were not less than a hundred. The loss sustained by the confederates, according to the information of deserters, was equally great: and many of their officers were severely wounded.

In the afternoon of the same day, the commandant of the castle requested General Branizki to receive into the town, a captain of dragoons, who was dangerously wounded, and whose father was a person in high estimation with the King of France. This permission was granted, and the officer received with every mark of tenderness and attention. He was a young man of about eighteen years of age, with a wound that threatened the most fatal consequences; but he was treated with so much care and skill, that he was cured by the end of the siege; when he returned to France, and to his father.

The castle of Tyniz, about a mile from Cracow, of which the confederates had possessed themselves, was surrounded with redoubts, where they had a great part of their people. The Count Branizki was ordered to march against them with his hulans, and a party of Russian cavalry, which he did with considerable effect.

The Russian troops began to want both powder and ball, and the Lieutenant of artillery, Haaks, had constructed a powder-mill in the suburbs; but this resource was not sufficient for the requisite supplies. Lieutenant-Colonel Nagel was accordingly sent to Kofel, with a small party, in order to purchase ammunition; and though the confederate

parties were scattered through the country, he avoided them with great address, and brought back a considerable quantity of the necessary stores.

In the course of the month of March, Lieutenant-colonel Michelson, who commanded a detachment behind Tyniz, was surprized by a party from the garrison of that place. But his resolution was equal to his danger ; he completely repulsed the enemy, who were superior to him in number, and brought a hundred prisoners with him to Cracow.

Towards the close of the same month, the general detached Michelson, with a strong body of troops, to Olsrezin, where the archives of the confederates were deposited. During the night, he contrived to get into the midst of the garrison, killed a considerable part of it, and dispersed the rest. But he did not content himself with getting possession of the archives, he pursued his advantages as far as Biala, upon the frontiers of Silesia ; and having driven from that place the pretended general confederation, who repassed the frontiers with great precipitation, he happily returned in safety to Cracow.

Some time afterwards, a considerable number of hussars, and confederate cavalry, appeared behind Tyniz, and on the near side of the Vistula. They were the remains of the black Lithuanian troops, which had been collected by Kofakowski ; and had made great speed, in order to raise the siege of the castle of Cracow. The Count Branicki sent against them a large party of his hulans : Lieutenant-Colonel Lang was also posted at Schwer-

zanzy, between Tynez and Cracow, but, with no more than two squadrons, of which his whole force consisted, he was not in a condition to resist the confederates, with a body of at least a thousand men. The hulans, also, could do nothing, but play off a few manœuvres, of little or no effect. General Suworow, therefore, determined to march against these confederate troops in person. He took with him two squadrons, and some Cossacs, and ordered an equal number to follow him. He found the hulans and Lang's squadrons manœuvring a retreat. That officer had been forced to give way, and the black troops were pressing upon him with redoubled steps. The general observed, that the object of the enemy was not to fight, but to get to Cracow ; and he resolved to prevent them. He accordingly ordered his cavalry and Cossacs to charge, Lang's squadrons and the hulan's followed, and they had broken through the enemy, before the other troops were arrived. Lieutenant-Colonel Lang received orders to cut off the retreat of the confederates ; and he at length pressed them so close, that a great part of them were driven into the Vistula, and perished.

In this engagement Suworow had a very narrow escape. In the heat of the action, a confederate officer rushed upon him, and having discharged both his pistols, made a blow at him with his sabre, which the general parried with his own. At this moment a cuirassier arrived, and struck the officer from his horse.

Thus the remainder of the Lithuanian confederates were dispersed. A hundred men were left on

the field of battle, three hundred were drowned in the river, fifty were made prisoners, and the rest disappeared, and were never heard of more.

In the beginning of April, the general received a twelve pounder from Warsaw, and as he had already two licornes, which carried eight pounders, four three pounders, and eight mortars, Lieutenant Haaks erected a battery on one of the strongest edifices, in the front of the principal gate of the castle, without being observed by the garrison. He also added a mortar, capable of throwing a ball of a hundred weight; and, as soon as the battery was completed, it began to play upon the castle. The apartments were frequently seen in flames, as well as a magazine of hay, but they were as often extinguished. A bomb fell on the house of the commandant, which made great havock; the wall on the side of the gate began to totter, and a breach was formed in the church, which was supported by the wall of the castle. The two galleries of the mine were completed, and it only remained to charge them.

The garrison of the castle were not only without flints, which had been consumed in their various sallies, but were reduced to the diet of horse-flesh. This circumstance was known from certain dispatches, delivered up by an officer who had been taken prisoner, as he was carrying an account of the wretched state of the garrison, both as to provisions and health, from the commandant to General Vio-menil, and requesting immediate relief.

The count availed himself of this intelligence, and, on the next day, sent captain Weimarn, of the cavalry, to the castle, with a definitive declaration to the French officers, that every preparation was made for an assault, and if the garrison did not surrender, it would be put to the sword.

On the eighth of April, when the night was already far advanced, the French Brigadier Galibert presented himself before the entrenchments, and demanded safe conduct to the general; he was accordingly introduced with the usual ceremonies. Suworow gave him a very civil reception; and, after a short conversation, dictated to him the principal articles of the capitulation, which contained more advantageous conditions than the French brigadier had ventured to propose; who was now reconducted under a proper escort and every becoming attention, to the castle.

On the following day, the same officer renewed his visit at ten in the morning; and, after he had been served with breakfast, began to start difficulties respecting certain articles of the capitulation. This conduct determined the general to grant less than he had originally proposed, and to assure him at his departure, that, if he returned without having accepted the articles as they actually were, other and less favourable conditions would be proposed and supported. That very night, however, Brigadier Galibert returned once more, to accept, in the name of the garrison, all the conditions that had been offered to it.

The principal articles of capitulation were as follows :—

I. The garrison shall deliver up their arms within the walls of the castle, and leave it in distinct platoons of a hundred men.

II. The lives and property of the garrison shall be protected.

III. The French troops, who form a part of the garrison, shall surrender themselves only as prisoners, but not as prisoners of war, because, there being no war between the powers of Russia and France, no exchange of prisoners can take place.

IV. The French troops which are under the command of General Viomenil, shall be transferred to Lemberg, those of Dumourier to Biala, in Lithuania, and those of the Polish confederates to Smolensko.

V. All the regalia of the crown, and other effects in the castle, shall be restored to the commissaries of his Polish majesty.

On the following morning, the king's commissaries entered the castle, and found the jewels of the crown properly disposed in a cabinet, which had been enclosed in a wall, during the siege ; and the other effects were in good condition.

It was now holy week, and the garrison marched out of the castle on the 15th of April, which was Easter-day, according to the terms of the capitula-

tion. The two brigadiers, Galibert and Choisi, as well as some other French officers, had the cross of St. Louis ; and when Monsieur de Choisi presented his sword to Suworow, he put it aside. "I cannot," said he, "receive the sword of a gallant man, in the service of a king, who is the ally of my own Sovereign," and they immediately embraced.

The principal officers were not only treated with kindness, but entertained with magnificence previous to their departure. The Count Branizki invited them to dine with him, and gave them a sumptuous entertainment. Major Sansow Zasseki was charged also to do the honours of a dinner to the other officers, in a palace prepared for their reception. The general quitted table to make the necessary dispositions for the conveyance of all his prisoners to Lublin. A coach was procured for the two brigadiers, and other carriages were appointed for the rest of the officers. The cavalry received such of their horses as remained, and farmers waggons were collected for the other prisoners. The general ordered the major on duty to take care that every possible attention should be paid to them on their route. They were escorted by four companies of infantry, and two field-pieces, two squadrons of cavalry, and fifty Cossacs, commanded by Colonel Idagien ; and the march was covered by a reserved detachment of almost equal force, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Michaelson, to whom he gave the principal charge.

The prisoners were about a thousand, a third of whom were cavalry, with near fifty officers of rank.

The loss of the Russians, during the siege, was two hundred killed, and about four hundred wounded.

Their progress was not interrupted : not one of the different parties of confederates, who infested the country, had the courage to attack the escort ; so that the whole arrived safe at Lublin ; from whence the prisoners were sent off to their respective destinations.

Suworow was impatient to continue his operations ; and without waiting for the return of the escort to Cracow, though he had but a small body of troops, detached the principal part of them against Zator, a small fortified town, about six miles from Cracow, on the banks of the Vistula. They surprized the garrison, and, without effusion of blood, brought away the commandant, with his officers, and two hundred prisoners. But before they quitted the place, they blew up the works, which were defended only by twelve useless pieces of artillery.

A small corps of observation served to overawe the towns of Tyniz and Landskroon till the detachment, which has been already mentioned, returned from Lublin : but it was no sooner arrived, and he had received a supply of cannon and ammunition from Rosel, than the general proceeded to invest Tyniz in form. In the mean time, the troops of the emperor arrived in this canton, and made themselves masters of Landskroon. Suworow therefore abandoned Tyniz to them, and, having withdrawn his artillery, returned to Cracow.

Several of the confederate chiefs at length submitted, and abandoned their party. Colonel Moschinski, of Sandomir, presented himself on parole to Suworow, gave in his resignation, and dismissed all those who were under his command. Marshal Masowizki did the same by deputation. The famous Major-General Schutz came in person with the remains of his fine troops of Radzewill, forming at this time a body of a thousand men, the principal part of whose officers were foreigners, and had served in different armies. He capitulated on very advantageons conditions, and the general treated him as his friend. His people were all disbanded, with a satisfactory gratification.

The Prussians had also marched against the confederates, and the three allied powers completed their design of possessing themselves of certain provinces of Poland.

Tranquility being restored in Poland, the Russian troops were withdrawn from that kingdom, except a few regiments, who were ordered to join the army, commanded by count Romanzow, against the Turks. A short time before, the Lieutenant-Generals Romanus and Elmpt arrived in Poland, with a body of troops in a complete state of equipment. The first passed by Lithuania, on the side of Lublin, and the latter remained there.

Thus ended the campaigns against the confederates in Poland, where General Suworow served during four years without interruption. Independent of the numerous inferior actions and multiplied skirmishes, in which his courage was always

displayed, and his military capacity never failed to appear ; he was covered with glory by the victory of Stalowiz, and the capture of Cracow ; which gave the promise of that brilliant career that he has since run.

In the month of September, he was attached to the corps of General Elmpt, which, on account of the actual situation of Sweden, was ordered to Finland, by the way of Petersburg. In the course of the autumn it took its departure, and by ordinary marches, arrived in the winter at Petersburg. The regiments destined for Finland traversed the city in great parade ; but General Suworow remained with his division in the capital.

In February, 1773, he was employed on the duty of inspecting the frontiers of Finland. He took his route by Wybourg, Kexholm, and Neuschott, towards the frontiers of Sweden, where he was determined to remain unknown. He found all classes of people, the clergy, the nobility, the burghers, and the whole militia of the country prejudiced against the new constitution. He reduced all he heard and saw to writing ; and on his return to Petersburg, made the necessary communications.

Towards the spring, the congress of the Turks, at Soczan, separated ; the truce was at an end, and it appeared as if war would be rekindled. General Suworow now received orders to join the army in Moldavia, where he served under the Field Marshal Romanzow.

## CHAP. III.

*THE FIRST WAR AGAINST THE TURKS, UNDER FIELD-MARSHAL ROMANZOW, IN THE YEARS 1773 AND 1774.*

GENERAL Suworow, in the beginning of May, 1773, arrived at Jassy, and presented himself to Field-Marshal Romanzow, who had then fixed his head-quarters at that place, the capital of Moldavia. On the third day after his arrival, he proceeded to join the corps of Walachia, to which he was attached : it was commanded by Lieutenant-General Count Soltikow, and was encamped before Tchurschebo. He reconnoitred the surrounding country, and went the following day to the convent of Nigojeschti, where he received his detachment. It consisted of regiments of carabineers and Astrakan infantry, with four field-pieces, and about a hundred Cossacs of the Don, under their brave officer Seminkin. There were also seventeen boats provided for the service of the detachment.

Nigojeschti is situate at the distance of a mile and a half from the Danube : Turtukay is upon the right bank of that river ; and to the right of the convent runs the Arbisch, which flows into it. Near its mouth some heavy pieces of artillery had been levelled on the opposite bank, which not only defended the river, but commanded a part of the country on the other side of it, and had often compelled the Russians to retire.

At this place, the Danube is upwards of a mile in breadth, with very steep banks ; nevertheless, General Suworow determined to arm all his boats, each of which was capable of containing from twenty to thirty men, and attempt a descent on the right side of the river. With this view he ordered soldiers to be employed as rowers, and made them practise under the direction of Lieutenant Palkin. It was also necessary that the boats should be transported upon carts drawn by oxen, and without being perceived, to the distance of a mile down the river ; where there was a commodious place for embarking the troops.

Every thing being in readiness, the detachment, consisting of four companies of infantry, a regiment of carabineers, and a hundred Cossacs, began its march in the darkest part of the night. The armed boats descended the Artisch, and the carriages proceeded along the side of the bank in a hollow way, which was covered by thickets.

When the whole party and their equipage was arrived at the place appointed, the general determined to remain there till the following night. He accordingly wrapped his cloak round him, and lay down, at a small distance from the river, to get a little repose ; but, just before day-break, he unexpectedly heard the cry of Allah ! very near the spot where he was. He instantly arose, and perceiving a body of Spahis or Turkish horse, coming towards him with uplifted sabres, he had only time to leap on his horse, and to gallop off with all possible speed.

Seminski instantly led on the Cossacs to attack them ; but with all his bravery he could not withstand their onset, and was obliged to retire. They then menaced the regiment of carabineers, when the general ordered two squadrons to fall on them sword in hand ; and they, in their turn, were now compelled to give way, and were pursued to the banks of the Danube ; when, throwing themselves into their large boats, they hastily escaped. The Russian infantry was at some distance, and had no share in this engagement. The Turks, who had upwards of four hundred men, left four score on the field, and a few prisoners, among whom was their Bim-bacha, an aged and venerable man.

This was the first acquaintance that Suworow made with the Turks, to whom the very name of this warrior is since become so formidable. The advantage, which he obtained in this action, seems to have been a prelude to the numerous victories he has since obtained over the Ottoman arms.

The Russians having been discovered, the general, extended his observations on the environs, and changed his plan. He ordered the carriages to return, the following night, embarked his infantry on the Artisch, in order to proceed to its conflux with the Danube. A hundred light carabineers, with their colonel, and the Cossacs, swam down the stream after them ; a service of no small risk ; but was attended on this occasion, with the loss only of a few men and horses.

A descent was now made on the right bank of the Danube, under a very severe fire of Turkish

artillery ; and Major Rehbeck was immediately ordered to get possession of a redoubt on the right, which covered the Turkish flotilla. Lieutenant Maurinow, who had formed his company into a hollow square, received orders to make himself master of a similar redoubt on the left. The centre, commanded by Colonel Batturin, came at once upon an empty redoubt, and, advancing onwards, enclosed an entrenchment : a heavy piece of artillery, which had been fixed in the road, on being discharged, burst in several pieces, wounded a considerable number, and, among the rest, the general himself received a very severe blow on his right leg. Nor was this all, for a janissary aimed a stroke at his breast, which he fortunately parried, and it was not repeated, as the Turks were immediately driven from the entrenchment, and left it to the possession of the Russians.

It was now an object of importance to gain a height, which was at a small distance, commanded all the country, and had not been fortified by the Turks. The Russians hurried thither, and, when they were arrived, the general commanded a halt.

The cavalry and the Cossacs pursued the Turks, as well as the dusk of the evening would allow them. Rehbeck had the good fortune to seize the flotilla ; and Maurinow, after having taken a redoubt, made himself master of Turtukay.

As it was not permitted to any one to pillage on his own account, Suworow had made a regulation, that, where pillage was allowed by the laws of war,

four persons should be appointed to that service from every battalion, and that the whole should partake of the booty.

He remained about an hour upon the hill, where he ordered the watch-word, and other military signals, to be continually repeated. The day, at length, began to appear.

Lieutenant-General, afterwards Prince Potemkin, who was encamped in front of Silistria, had promised to send, by his boats, two thousand Cossacs of Saporichi; but they did not arrive till several hours after the combat was concluded.

On a signal given, the Russian troops returned to the banks of the river; and having embarked, took several Turkish boats, with six brass cannon, and eight heavy pieces of artillery. The latter were sunk in the Danube, as there was not time to bring them away. Turtukay was in flames; and, about ten o'clock, a large magazine of powder blew up, whose explosion was heard throughout the surrounding country.

Immediately after the victory, General Suworow dispatched an account of it to Field-Marshal Romanzow. The style of the relation is truly laconic and original, and displays, in some degree, the character of the writer. The following is a feeble translation of it :

“ Honour and glory to God! Glory to you,  
“ Romanzow! We are in possession of Turtukay,  
“ and I am in it.

“ SUWOROW.”

As a recompense for this victory, the empress transmitted to him the cross of the order of Saint George, of the second class, with the following letter :

*To our Major-General de Suworow.*

“ The bravery and heroism of which you have  
“ given such a brilliant example, in the conduct of  
“ the detachment entrusted to your command, at  
“ the siege and assault of Turtukay, render you  
“ worthy of some honourable distinction, and of  
“ our Imperial favour : In conformity, therefore,  
“ to the statutes of the military order of Saint  
“ George, which we have instituted, we graciously  
“ name you to be a knight of that order, of the  
“ second class, commanding you to receive the  
“ decorations which accompany this letter, and to  
“ suspend its cross from your neck, according to  
“ our institution. We are pleased to encourage  
“ the belief, that this Imperial favour will animate  
“ you more and more to merit the good-will with  
“ which we are your affectionate,

“ CATHERINE.”

*Sarskoeselo, June 30, 1773.*

When the troops had reached the left bank of the Danube, they enjoyed a short repose in a small valley ; and, in the course of the night, returned to their camp, near the convent of Nigojeschti. This happened on the tenth of May.

This victory cost the Russians sixty men killed, and one hundred and fifty wounded. The Turks lost four large, and six small standards. Their

troops, which were chiefly infantry, amounted to four thousand men. Their fine flotilla, which fell into the power of the Russians, consisted of fifty boats and trading vessels. The soldiers made a considerable booty in effects, as well as in gold and silver: and, when they afterwards attended divine service for public thanksgiving, they presented the priests with roubles and pieces of gold.

A new raised regiment of Cossacs, consisting of three hundred and fifty men, natives of Poland, and commanded by Major Casperow, reinforced Suworow's detachment. The general now employed himself in the continual exercise of his troops, and in fortifying the convent of Nigojefchti.

In the month of June, he was attacked by a violent fever, which obliged him to go to Bucharest for the recovery of his health.

The grand army, commanded by Field-Marshal Romanzow, passed the Danube in the month of July, and encamped before Silistria. At the same time, General Weismann passed the river near Ismail, beat the Turks three times in the course of his march, and effected a junction with the main army.

The Turks received a reinforcement before Turtukay, and fortified themselves in a more skilful manner than they had hitherto done. General Suworow, though he was by no means re-established in his health, set off to join his detachment, which, during his absence, had received no great addition to its numbers. The battalion of Nisow, consisting

of two hundred men, with the regiment of Cossacs of the Don commanded by Colonel Leonow, and two hundred Arnauts composed the whole of his late reinforcements. He armed the regiment of carabineers with muskets from Bucharest, and had them instructed in the manual discipline of the infantry. Major Count Mellin had under his orders at Bucharest three hundred recruits, whom he was employed in forming to every duty and exertion of the soldier's life. Mellin came afterwards to Nigojeschti ; the general followed him ; and, in a short time, proceeded on a second expedition.

He ordered his flotilla to proceed empty down the Artisch, and to come to off the left bank of the Danube. He left two hundred men in garrison at Nigojeschti to keep clear the right bank of that river : at the same time, he erected a battery of six cannon on the left bank, and entrusted its defence to Colonel Norow, with two companies, two squadrons, and a new raised regiment of Cossacs, that the Turks might not surprize or turn it. The detachment, destined for embarkation, consisted of from sixteen to eighteen hundred men.

They began their march in the early part of the night ; it was at first very cloudy and obscure, but the moon appeared as they approached the bank, which rendered it necessary for them to retire to a hiding-place, that they might not be perceived from the opposite side of the river. The moon, however, soon retired, when the march was renewed, and at midnight they arrived at the place where they were to embark.

The flotilla was distributed into three divisions, under the Colonels Baturin, Mellin, and Mescher-ski, who commanded the infantry ; while the squadrons of horse and the Cossacs of the Don swam across the river.

Though it was very tempestuous, Baturin effected a descent on the right bank, and drove the Turks from an entrenchment of which he had received information. He immediately gave the signal of his success, and halted there, instead of pushing forwards to attack another which was of still greater importance. The general was still on the left bank to superintend the embarkation. As he suspected that all was not right on the opposite side of the river, and that there was no time to lose in taking advantage of the night, he at once resolved to embark with the second division, which the force of the current carried a quarter of a mile too low. Suworow was still in so languid a state that he could not walk without the support of two men ; and his voice was so weak that it was absolutely necessary for an officer to be always by his side to repeat his commands.

He now returned up the river under its right bank, and disembarked his people near the town of Tur-tukay, which he had lately burned, though there still remained a considerable number of houses ; and he was obliged to pass through a part of its ruins. At the dawn of day several bodies of armed Turks appeared, whom he did not think proper to attack, as his principal object was to effect a junction with the battalion of Nissow, under Colonel Baturin, which he happily effected ; and, without

reproaching that officer for his late error, he immediately dispatched Major Rehbock, with three companies, to attack the important entrenchment, which Baturin had neglected, and the troops followed. The Arnautes had been already detached with orders to get unperceived behind the Turkish camp, and by their outcries and manœuvres to fill it with alarm and confusion.

Rehbock took possession of the entrenchment, and the whole body of infantry soon established themselves in it. It was situate on the very height which has been mentioned in the detail of the former battle. At day-light it was found to be on an eminence that commanded the whole country. The entrenchment, indeed, was not completed: the parapet was not sufficiently elevated, the ditch had not the necessary depth, and the entrance was not fortified. The area, however, was so extensive, that the whole body of infantry, with the foot carabineers, could display themselves at large in it.—No Turks were visible in the other entrenchments.

A party of carabineers having set out on a pillaging party without orders, the Turks fell upon, and pursued them; and, before they could recover themselves, the whole Turkish army, consisting of seven thousand men, quitted their camp, and proceeded to attack the entrenchment. It was about six in the morning.

The Turkish infantry posted themselves behind the hedges, where they did considerable mischief: and the cavalry rushed on towards the entrenchment. As the parapet was low, the Russians were

under the necessity of firing on their knees. They had indeed taken some cannon, but as there were no artillery men with them, they were, for the present, altogether useless.

In the mean time, the Russian rear guard advanced, with one field-piece, which the current of the river had driven to a considerable distance from the place where they had been ordered to disembark. This single cannon proved to be of great service, as the Turks were without artillery : but the principal mischief was produced by the battery on the left bank of the Danube. Though the Turks had been continually repulsed in their attacks on the entrenchments, they returned as often with renewed impetuosity.

The action had now lasted two hours, when the Turkish horse reassembled in great numbers, and attacked with the fiercest ardour the unfortified entrance of the parapet. The Bacha, who commanded them, appeared in rich array at their head ; but, as they approached, he received a shot in his breast, which a serjeant of chasseurs had discharged at him, and, with a loud scream, fell from his horse. His people instantly surrounded him, when a body of fifty Cossacs broke through the midst of them, and though the Turks exerted the most consummate bravery to save their chief, a Cossac completed his fate by the stroke of a lance.

Thus died Sary Mechmed Bacha, the second in command of the famous Ali Bey, of Egypt, whom he afterwards betrayed ; a man alike distinguished for his courage, his strength, and his beauty. His

people, though they were confounded, did not disperse, but continued the combat during an hour ; and, though compelled to retreat, disdained to fly.

At length, in order at once to terminate the contest, General Suworow commanded Captain Bratzow to sally from the entrenchment, with a column of two companies of grenadiers, six men in front, and to fall upon the Turks ; but that brave officer met with a powerful resistance, sustained considerable loss, and was himself mortally wounded : notwithstanding such a discouraging circumstance, the column pushed onwards, and the Turks were repulsed. At this moment, the whole force of the entrenchment came forwards, when the Turkish army was completely routed, and the Russian cavalry were ordered to pursue them.

Suworow now mounted his horse, and proceeding to an elevated spot, took a view of the camp from whence the Turks had issued to attack the entrenchment, and where it appeared that they had left but a few scattered troops to protect it. He therefore ordered a body of infantry to hasten thither with all speed, and possess themselves of the artillery, while he followed with the rest of his forces. He formed them into three sides of a square, and covered the wings with his cavalry, in order to receive the Turks with advantage, if they should be induced to attack him ; but they continued their retreat, and left their camp to the conquerors. On this occasion the Russian soldiers divided a very rich booty.

Four-and-twenty large vessels, called schaiks, were also seized by the Russians ; they were secured in shallow water, and the access to them defended by palisades. It employed several hours, and required no common exertions to disengage them. As the general considered this post of little consequence, he gave orders for an immediate return. The Russian infantry accordingly embarked on their flotilla ; while the cavalry went on board the schaicks, with the artillery which had been captured, and the whole force proceeded to that part of the left bank of the river, where the battery, commanded by Colonel Norow, had been erected. There they fixed their camp.

In this action, which took place on the 27th of July, the Turks lost a thousand men, and eighteen brass cannon, which had never been employed.

The remains of Sary Mechmed Bacha were interred on the right bank, with all the honours due to his high rank and military qualities.

The news of this victory was carried by Major Rehbock to Field-Marshal Romanzow, who received it with the greater pleasure, as on the same day, an ineffectual attempt had been made upon Silistria.

On the following day, the general embarked a large part of his force, and ascended the Danube. He left none of his troops behind, but the cavalry, and a detachment of infantry at the convent, which he had already fortified. The weather was very favourable when they embarked ; but, towards the

evening, a storm arose, which so completely dispersed the flotilla, that the boat, in which the general had taken his passage, with great difficulty gained the right bank of the river. In the middle of the night the tempestuous weather subsided, and, in the morning, the flotilla was reunited, with very considerable loss. Here General Suworow had a conference with count Soltikow, whose corps lay before Schursch, on the subject of an enterprize on Ruscheluck ; but the project was deferred on account of the unsuccessful attempt on Silistria, the intelligence of which, had now reached them. The general, therefore, returned to his former post, and the flotilla entered into the Artisch.

In a short time after, there was a fresh distribution of military commands, and Suworow was attached to the army of the field-marshall.

Previous to his departure from Nigojeschti, an accident happened to the general, which threatened the most fatal consequences. The stair-case of the convent having become very slippery on account of the rain, the general, who was not recovered from the hurt in his leg, fell with great violence on his back ; which, besides the exterior bruises, was attended with internal pains, and a great difficulty of respiration. He was, therefore, conveyed to Bucharest, where, by the aid and care of a very skilful physician, in the course of fifteen days, his health was completely re-established. As soon as he was recovered, which was in the middle of August, he repaired to his new post.

The detachment, of which he was appointed to take the command, was encamped before Chirschowa; while Romanzow maintained his position near the river Jalowiza. Suworow immediately crossed the Danube to Chirschowa. The town is situated on the right bank of the river, which, at this place, is half a mile broad, and is divided by several islands.

He found the detachment very much exposed to be attacked by the Turks, as well from its own weakness, as the nature of its position. He determined therefore to hazard nothing, and to secure his troops by strong entrenchments. He began by reconnoitring the environs, and marking the places where fortifications should be erected. He was, however, so unfortunate, as to lose, at this time, the only engineer in his service. That officer, in passing a river, mistook the ford, and was drowned.

The entrenchments proceeded with all possible expedition, and they were no sooner completed, than intelligence was received that the Turks at Karissia, about ten miles from Chirschowa, were in motion, and would soon begin to march.

The correctness of this information was proved, by their approaching, in the night of the 3d of September, within half a mile of the town; the moon being at the full. The principal Russian officers were of opinion that the Turks would immediately make their attack. The general, however, entertained different sentiments, and ordered his troops to repose. As for himself, he waited with impatience for the break of day; and, some

time before it was light, he mounted his horse, and, accompanied by two Cossacs, proceeded to observe the march and motions of the enemy.

His corps consisted of four regiments of infantry, two of which were very incomplete, not containing more than two hundred men, with their cannon, three squadrons of hussars, and a hundred Cossacs. The two full regiments were encamped in a low and covered island, with which a communication was formed by a bridge of boats; and the two weak regiments were distributed in the castle and the intrenchments.

The Turkish army of eleven thousand men advanced. At eight, they approached the farthest redoubt, which was commanded by the cannon of the castle. When they drew nigh, the general made a feint of alarm, and ordered the tents to be struck and carried into the redoubt. Around the entrenchments, deep hollows had been made, which were planted with small lances. He had also ordered that the enemy should be suffered to approach close to the works, without a single discharge of artillery.

The Turks appeared to entertain the design of attacking the redoubt and the castle at the same moment; but Colonel Dumaschow, from a brave impatience, and before they were within reach, discharged some balls at them, which counteracted the general's first plan, and for some time delayed their approach. They, however, advanced in skirmishing, and though there were some works that interrupted them, they continued to gain

ground ; but their march was not marked with its usual rapidity. Suworow now ordered his skirmishers to retreat by little and little, and to take flight, as if seized with a sudden panic. By this stratagem he hoped to tempt the enemy close to the entrenchments.

It did not, however, produce the desired effect ; for as soon as they were freed from the flying parties of the Russians, the Turkish army immediately extended itself, and presented a very uncommon spectacle. Accustomed as they were to fight in small scattered bands, the Turks now ranged themselves in European order of battle, and formed themselves in regular lines. The janissaries, with the artillery, occupying the centre, and the spahis, or cavalry, taking post on the wings. They then advanced in tolerable order against the farthest entrenchment, whose ditch was not of any considerable depth, from the stony nature of the ground ; but it was guarded by a double range of chevaux-de-frise, with pallisadoes behind, on a part of that eminence which covered the island where the two strong regiments were posted.

The Turks commenced the attack with a discharge of artillery ; and immediately advanced against the entrenchments with such precipitation, that the general himself had no other means of escaping, but by leaping over the chevaux-de-frise that defended the entrance. Though they were received by a very brisk and well sustained discharge of musquetry, they continued to advance, and passed, in great numbers, over the chevaux-de-frise to the palisades, where they fixed their stan-

dards ; but they tried in vain to proceed. Colonel Machipelow, with the regiment of Staroskolin, which was posted in the island, fell upon their right wing with bayonets fixed. Prince Gagarin passed the bridge, and having turned the height, attacked their wing, and the Baron Rosen, with the cavalry, charged the centre ; they were, therefore, soon thrown into disorder ; and as they had not been accustomed to fight in rank and file, their confusion was proportionally increased. They abandoned their artillery, and were pursued throughout the night to the distance of several miles. The janissaries, incommoded by their heavy garments, threw them aside in order to facilitate their flight, and the spahis dispersed themselves over the country.

General Suworow, at length commanded the pursuit to cease, and gave his troops a few hours of rest. In the morning, they returned to Chirscowa, and found their way strewed with the bodies of the enemy.

The Turks lost, in this action, upwards of a thousand men, among whom were two pachas, and a great number of Moors. The Russians took a hundred prisoners, with some officers, and nine standards. The artillery, which fell into their hands, consisted of eight cannons, and a mortar. On their side the number killed were very inconsiderable, but their wounded amounted to four hundred.

At the end of October, Lieutenant-General Prince Dolgorucki and the Baron Ungarn were ordered to march to Schumma ; but they separated on their route, and the latter proceeded against Warna,

where he unfortunately failed ; while the violent rains prevented Prince Dolgorucki from going to Schumma. Suworow was to have accompanied him in this expedition, but he was not, altogether, recovered from his fever ; he, therefore, returned into Russia, to attend to his health, where he passed the winter.

In 1774, towards the end of April, he returned to the army of the Danube. He was now advanced to the rank of lieutenant-general, and appointed to command the second division, which was before Sloboceia, over against Silistria, as well as the corps de reserve, at Chircowa. This division consisted of sixteen battalions, twenty squadrons, and two regiments of Cossacs. The corps de reserve was composed of fifteen battalions, thirteen squadrons, a regiment of Cossacs, and two thousand five hundred arnautes, with a large park of artillery.

Before Silistria, where Lieutenant-General Suworow had fixed his quarters, there was a large island of the Danube, which was an object of continual contest. He, therefore, made it neutral, to prevent all useless attacks ; and the patroles, of the different armies, frequently met there, without infringing the neutrality of the place.

It was intended that the greater part of the Russian army should pass the Danube ; but the general, with a detachment from the main body, was entrenched in a wood, about a mile from Silistria ; where his people had frequent skirmishes with the enemy.

At the end of a week, he quitted his entrenchments, and made a march of five miles ; in the course of which, he met in a wood, Lieutenant-General Kamenski, with his corps, from Ismail, who had marched during the whole night, and had not found time to either encamp or eat ; when, about noon, a party of light horse, who had been sent upon discoveries, returned with the quarter-master-general of the Turks, whom they had made prisoner, with his escort. From him it was learned, that the Turkish army, of fifty thousand men, was in full march.

General Kamenski commanded the signal for remounting, and ordered his cavalry to attack those of the enemy, which had advanced into the wood ; but they were repulsed. Suworow's infantry marched on, with the cavalry behind ; and three squadrons of hussars, with the Cossacs before. He immediately fell upon the Turkish cavalry, who were pursuing the Russian horse ; but had not sufficient force to continue the attack, and was obliged to retreat. Many pieces were discharged at him, and he was so closely pursued by a Spahi, that he was indebted for his preservation to the swiftness of his horse. He soon after fell in with two battalions of grenadiers, and a battalion of chasseurs, who had been attacked with such precipitation, that they had not time to form in a regular manner. They were eight thousand Albanian infantry, who had made the attack, in their usual manner, with shouts and outcry ; and had already killed several chasseurs, who had advanced so far as to have their retreat cut off. The three battalions themselves were in a very perilous situation. They continued firing for

a whole hour, and severely galled the Albanians, but not with sufficient effect to make them give way : at length, the Brigadier Machipelow arrived, with two battalions of Senski, two battalions of Susdal, and two companies of grenadiers. The firing now discontinued ; and, when the smoke was dispersed, it appeared that the advanced guard of the Turks had made a retreat.

Suworow having traversed the woods with Machipelow, and, observing that the Turks fled on all sides, he resolved to push his advantage. The way through the wood was very narrow, so that the troops were obliged to march in files ; at the same time, the heat was so oppressive, that many of the soldiers fell down, and expired on the spot. The road was also covered with the carcases of Turks, and draft bullocks which they had killed. These animals had dragged some hundreds of armed wagons, which had been brought with a design to enclose the Russians in their entrenchments.

General Louis, at the head of three thousand cavalry of the Ismail corps, covered the march of the infantry, and frequently harassed the Albanians in their flight, though he was continually repulsed by numerous bodies of Turkish horse : he was sometimes, indeed, obliged to retreat to the infantry, to be protected, in his turn, by their artillery. On quitting the wood, they were overtaken by a very heavy shower of rain, which, though attended with some inconvenience, served to refresh the troops, and to slacken the retreat of the Turks ; the weight of whose long robes increased, in proportion to the water they had imbibed : and, as

they used small pockets, instead of cartridge-boxes, their powder was moistened, and rendered unfit for use.

The Russians had no sooner gained the open country, than they were cannonaded by three batteries, which the Turks had raised on a height ; and from whose fire the former sustained considerable loss. But when Lieutenant-General Suworow ordered his troops to attack the batteries, they were inspired by his command, and soon became masters of them.

The body of troops, which was collected to make head against the grand army of the Turks, amounted to twelve thousand men. Being ranged, in order of march, they advanced against the enemy, on a plain which rose with a gentle acclivity. The janissaries and Spahis instantly attacked the right wing of the Russians, who repulsed them with great loss. But, though the janissaries renewed the attack, with a fury approaching to madness, with a sabre in one hand, and a poniard in the other, all their efforts were vain : at length, after a bloody contest, they fled in different parties, and were pursued, with added destruction, by the Russian cavalry.

Some detachments of infantry, in making a movement to the right, discovered, behind the high ground, the Turkish camp, which was placed in a bottom, near the small town of Kosludgi, and at the distance of a little mile from the wood. This circumstance was no sooner known, than General Suworow resolved to attack it ; but, from the ne-

cessary rapidity of the manœuvre, the greater part of the artillery was left behind, and the troops hastened to the service with no more than eight field-pieces. But, after a few minutes firing from the height, the Turks took to flight, and their camp was speedily evacuated.

It was one of the most beautiful camps the Turks had formed. The tents were new, and all decorated, after their fashion, with the pictured distinctions of their different companies, which they denominate *odas*; with lions, stags, horses, and elephants. Contrary to their usual custom, they had left the whole standing, without the least injury, and with all its valuable appendages; so that the Russians possessed themselves of an immense booty.

On the other side of the camp, there was some high ground, which General Suworow was determined to occupy, as it commanded the surrounding country. He proceeded, therefore, with three squadrons of hussars, and ordered the rest of his troops to follow. The hussars had no sooner gained the height, than they were, very unexpectedly, cannonaded, by some very heavy artillery, from a wood which was before them. The general, therefore, ordered Major Perfintiew, to take three companies of infantry, and possess himself of that position. He accordingly discomfitted the Turks, took their cannon, and the troops maintained their post.

In this battle, which was fought on the 11th of June, the Turks lost three thousand men, some hundred prisoners, forty pieces of artillery, and

eighty standards, with their superb camp. They were commanded by the Aga of the Janissaries, the Reis effendi, and several bachas.

Soon after this victory, Lieutenant-General Suworow was attacked by a very alarming return of his fever; and he became so weak, that he was not only unable to mount his horse, but it was with great difficulty that he could stand without assistance. He therefore, quitted his division, and went to Bucharest, to re-establish his health. He had designed, on his recovery, to repair to General Count Toltikow, who commanded before Ruschuck: but, in the mean time, peace was concluded.

After he had been to take leave of Field-Marshal Romanzow, at Fokschani, he returned to Russia; but, on his arrival at Jassy, he received an order from Petersburgh, to proceed, with all possible haste, to Moscow, to assist Prince Wolgonsk, commander-in-chief at Moscovy; where he was commissioned to appease the interior troubles of that part of the empire.

## CHAP. IV.

*THE PURSUIT OF PUGATSCHEW, WHO IS MADE PRISONER.*

LIEUTENANT-General Suworow arrived at Moscow in the month of August, 1774; but in the first conversation he had with Prince Wolgonski, he perceived that his presence was not necessary in that city; and accordingly set off on a tour through the interior parts of the empire.

In the course of it he paid a visit to the General-in-Chief Count Panin, who was employed to compose the disturbances that prevailed in that part of the kingdom. At this time, Panin had received instructions from Petersburgh respecting Suworow; in consequence of which the latter was invested with full power, to act on all occasions as should seem best for the advantage of his sovereign; and special directions were dispatched to all commanders of troops, as well as governors of the adjoining provinces, to submit themselves, without reserve, to the orders of Lieutenant-General Suworow.

Her Imperial majesty also condescended to honour him with a letter, written by herself, to testify the satisfaction which she derived from his zeal and activity in her service.

On the very day, when he received these appointments, he quitted Count Panin, under an escort of fifty men; and took his route by Arfamas,

Penza, and Saratow, where he obtained more positive information as to the service on which he was to be employed.

A short time before, the rebel, or as Suworow used himself to call him, the robber Pugatschew, after having forcibly carried off some hundred men, and all the draft horses, had quitted this part of the country to proceed to Zarizyn. The general was therefore under the necessity of embarking his escort on the Wolga for that place, while he marched along the bank with the small number of horses which he had been able to procure.

In his route from Penza, he fell in with several small corps which had been raised by private gentlemen. He also occasionally encountered bodies of troops who espoused the cause of Pugatschew ; but they never attempted to attack him ; and, as he had so few people with him, he did not venture to attack them. The rebel had often been beat and put to flight, but he as often reappeared with recruited power. His force at Saratow consisted of about eight thousand men, consisting in a great measure of ill-armed peasants. Among these there were but a thousand regular infantry, with about twelve pieces of artillery, four regiments of Cossacs of the Don, and three hundred Cossacs of Uralsk, who alone remained faithful to him, out of a large body of them, which had been, in the beginning, attached to his cause.

At Tarizyn, the general met Colonel Michelson, who had very lately gained fresh and very considerable advantages, in an engagement with Pugats-

chew ; in which the regular infantry, who had never been sincere in the cause of that insurgent, and the greatest part of the peasants, had surrendered : so that his force consisted then only of the Cossacs of Uralsk, with some bands of peasants ; with which he took refuge in the extensive heaths of that country.

Thither Suworow was resolved to follow him, nor to quit the pursuit till he had secured him. As Colonel Michelson had, in the last engagement, taken a great number of horses, they served to mount three hundred infantry ; with which, two squadrons of regular troops, two hundred Cossacs, and two field pieces, Suworow passed the Wolga at Jatizyn, and ascended the river to the large village of Michelowka, which is situated over against the town of Denitrowska. As the inhabitants of this village had swerved from their fidelity, the general seized fifty pair of bullocks, on a pretence that he wanted them for the transport of his baggage ; but his real object was to provide for his subsistence during his march through a long tract of heathy unproductive country, where it would not be possible to procure sufficient provisions to maintain his detachment for five days.

On the following day, they began their march through these immense deserts, where there were neither habitations, nor roads, nor any trace of civilized life. In the day, they were obliged to direct their course by the sun, and at night the stars were their guides. Besides, the heat reflected by the sands was insufferably oppressive, nor could they find a tree or thicket to afford them its hospi-

table shade : they were therefore obliged to pursue their journey during the night. To their other inconveniences, they were compelled to lessen the allowance of provisions, as they did not know how long it might be before they should receive a fresh supply.

They directed their course to the little river Gerflau, on whose banks a few trees are scattered, and from thence to the five lakes of Saitch. There the general fell in with Major Count Mellin, with a few hundred men, and Colonel Illoweiski, with a regiment of Cossacs, and Martimianow, a chief of the Cossacs of Uralsk, who had not taken part with the insurgents, with a hundred of his people. The troops had left Jarizyn before Suworow's arrival at that place. On their route through the desert, they had met several bands of peasants, attached to the party of Pugatschew ; and, having convinced them of their error, had sent them back to their country without effusion of blood.

They arrived at the confluence of two rivers, Usa, which flow into a large lake. This spot, which is in the midst of the heaths of Uralsk, was covered with wood, and thither, according to the report of some peasants who had quitted him, Pugatschew was endeavouring to retire. The Russian troops amounted to about a thousand men, well provided with field-pieces ; while Pugatschew's force was now reduced to three hundred. The general accordingly distributed his people into various parties, in order to seek him out, and to cut him off from all possibility of escape. They were already upon his track, in the thickest part of the

wood, when the hermits, many of whom are scattered about this country, and support themselves by fishing, gave information that Pugatschew had arrived there that morning, and that some of his own people had bound him hand and foot, and taken him to Uralsk.

Pugatschew had flattered himself, that he should have been able to persuade such of the Cossacs as appeared to be attached to his cause, to accompany him to the lake of Aral, beyond the Caspian sea, and unite themselves to the Karakalpaks, a wandering horde of Kirgis-Kay ; but when they heard of the troops that were in pursuit of him, they were alarmed at the danger that threatened themselves, and took the resolution to deliver him up at Uralsk.

General Suworow now ordered all the parties to be called in, and set off for Uralsk. During the night they lost their way, and fell in with the Kirkis, a nation known for their invincible courage ; many bands of which were scattered about those deserts. They are strangers to fear, and though they were far inferior in numbers to the Russians, they did not hesitate to attack them. Twenty of these people were slain ; at the same time, many of the Russians were wounded with their arrows, and the Count Maurimouitsch, aid-de-camp, and a few others, lost their lives.

The general hastened onwards, accompanied by such as had activity sufficient to keep pace with him ; and, in a few days, they arrived at Uralsk. Colonel Simonow, who was the commandant of the

town, had already taken Pugatschew into his custody, and now deliverered him up to Suworow.

This insurgent had, at one time, collected such a force, and was followed with such enthusiasm, that, if his understanding had been equal to his courage, and his moderation had kept pace with his power, he might certainly have possessed himself of Moscow, and made the Imperial Catherine tremble on her throne. Many stories are related of him which we are not required to repeat. We shall only add, that he was a Cosiac, and born in a village on the river Don ; and, as it is related, having in his early youth assisted a young woman in conducting her horses to drink in the river, she accompanied her acknowledgments with a declaration, that he would one day be emperor. This prophetic compliment is said to have worked up his enthusiastic mind, and, by inflaming his ambition, to have produced the extraordinary circumstances of his life.

General Suworow, having got possession of Pugatschew, he accompanied in person the troops that escorted him, on his removal from Uralsk. During a certain part of the way, he was enclosed in a large cage, placed on a carriage ; but was afterwards removed to a waggon, along with his son ; a boy of twelve years of age, who inherited, and at that early period, displayed the turbulent qualities of his father. At length they arrived at Sinsbirsck, a town on the Wolga, when Suworow delivered up his prisoner to Count Panin, who ordered him to be conveyed to Moscow ; where he suffered the punishment due to his crimes.

During the absence of Count Panin at Moscow, the general remained at Sinsbirsk, and took the command of the army. It amounted to eighty thousand men, who were in winter quarters, in different cantons upon the Wolga; in the province of Orenbourg, and in the governments of Casna and Penza.

In the spring of the year 1775, the general joined his corps on the frontiers. He afterwards went by way of Samara to Orenbourg, where General Monfurow commanded, and of which General Reinsdorf was governor, with whom he had a particular conference. As he was on his return by Ufa, he received the very unexpected information, that a successor of the rebel Pugatfchew, named Sametriow, had appeared on the borders of the Caspian sea. This man had frequently pillaged the Turks, and once seized several trading vessels, with some pieces of artillery. He made incursions by sea and by land, and had approached to Astracan, on the side of the lake Aral.

Measures were accordingly taken to put a stop to his career; and the general dispatched two battalions, with some artillery, and dragoons, down the Wolga for that purpose. At the same time, he communicated the intelligence to the governor of Astracan.

Sametriow had been a private foot soldier, was afterwards advanced, and had deserted. He possessed both talents and courage, but the means of employing them to any great extent had not been afforded him. He had never collected more than

three hundred followers, and when they found that he was in danger of being seized by the troops that pursued him, they abandoned him to his fate.

The peace was celebrated during the summer of this year, at Moscow ; and Lieutenant-General Suworow received, on that occasion, a sword, enriched with diamonds. During the following winter, he went to Moscow, and arrived there at the time when the empress was preparing to leave it. He was now advanced to the command of the Petersburg division, but he remained some time at Moscow, for the superintendance of his private affairs.

## CHAP. V.

*SUWOROW'S OPERATIONS IN CUBA. A NEW KHAN  
ESTABLISHED THERE.*

**I**N November, 1776, Suworow received a commission for the Crimea, where Lieutenant-General Prince Prosforski then was. He arrived there in December, took the command of a corps, which was stationed in winter quarters, in the environs of Perekop.

The empress had fixed on Schaim Ghiray, as Khan of the Crimea, in the place of Deulet Ghiray. The former was then in the wilds of Cuban, among the Tartars of Nogay. In February, 1777, he came from Tamann, by the strait of Caffa, towards Jenicole, in the Crimea. Suworow received him under the walls of Perekop. In March, he advanced against the troops of Deulet Ghiray, and without striking a blow, intirely dispersed them, by his rapid marches in the neighbourhood of Karasbasar and Achmetschet, where he posted himself with his corps. Deulet Ghiray fled across the Black Sea to Constantinople, and Schaim Ghiray was proclaimed Khan.

In the course of the summer, Suworow was again attacked with a fever, and removed to a distance from the Crimea, on account of the climate: he went to Pultava, and fell dangerously ill of an inflammatory fever, from which he did not recover till the end of the autumn.

In December, he took the command of the corps of Cuban, where he arrived by Rostow, Azof, and Juy. This corps consisted of five regiments of infantry, with their field-pieces, and twelve pieces of heavy artillery, ten squadrons of dragoons, twenty squadrons of hussars, and five regiments of Cossacs. They were distributed partly under an old fort, called Koppyl, partly in an entrenchment, near Tarmar on the Black Sea, and the rest in the wilds of Tamann, as far as Azof, in intrenchments and redoubts of communication; in each of which a company was posted, with two pieces of cannon, to defend themselves against the banditti of Circassia.

These nations, who inhabit the left bank of the Cuban, and are generally known under the name of Circassians, are divided into various tribes. They are called great and little Abascians, Circassians, (whose country is celebrated for the beauty of the women,) Schaptschiks, Attukays, Temirgois, Cassaiens, and Barays. The little Abascians are altogether pagans, and the rest, though Mahometans by profession, retain many pagan ceremonies, in some degree blended with those of christianity. Behind the Attukays are Tartar Naurusis, among whom are many poor sultans of the race of Gerigis, and a great number of that of Chaban-Sultan. They are descended from a shepherd and a sultana who was poisoned, but nevertheless have not lost their title. All these tribes live in perfect anarchy.

Their wants, however, unite them in bands of from ten to one hundred, and sometimes five hundred men. They are strong and courageous, and

are provided with fire-arms, sabres, and bows and arrows. They often come and pillage even the habitations of the Cossacs of the Don ; and, when a few of their number are killed, return home, keeping always on the defensive. They are good marksmen, and so swift, that it is very difficult to take any of them. Their chief object in their incursions is to make prisoners, whom they sell for slaves to the Turks, or employ them in agriculture. **Batyrd Ghiray**, elder brother of the reigning Khan, had above an hundred of these slaves, whom he maintained with great care, in a village beyond the Cuban.

They infested the public roads, and sometimes even surprized the soldiers. Parties, indeed, had been sent out to make reprisals on the left bank of the Cuban, but it was difficult to distinguish the innocent from the guilty. Hence Suworow thought it expedient to cover all the right bank of that river with works. From its mouth to the lines of Caucasus, which had before been fortified, were small fortresses at intervals of ten miles, with intermediate forts of lesser dimensions. These works were merely repaired, and this undertaking Suworow and Lieutenant-Colonel Fock completed, without any engineer whatever. They each employed fifteen hundred men, and, as the whole winter passed without snow or cold weather in Cuban, the work was finished in six weeks. They were indeed frequently interrupted by sudden attacks of the Circassians, though often with insignificant forces ; but on some occasions the enemy fell on them in numbers, and as many as fifty men remained upon the field. When the works were completed, the

incursions of the Turks became more rare, though they still continued to molest them, and the Cossacs suffered the least in these attacks.

In May, 1778, Prosoorowski left the Crimea for Petersburg, and Suworow took the command of the corps in that Peninsula, and of the troops distributed over the country, as far as the Dniper; forming together a body of sixty thousand men, under the command of Field-Marshal Romanzow. At that time, Lieutenant-General Tekelli commanded in the Ukraine, and Lieutenant-General Rechesski in Poland.

The Porte viewing the elevation of Schaim Ghiray, by no means, with an indifferent eye, made preparations for war, and sent considerable numbers of troops into Moldavia, who were assembled near Schotin. They also ordered out a fleet of one hundred and sixty sail, fifteen of which were of the line. under the orders of the celebrated Hassan, Captain-Pacha, and of Alibey of Natolia. Suworow now fortified several peninsula's of the Crimea, and even caused entrenchments to be made in the mountains.

Although the principal troubles in the Crimea were appeased, the Turks had still eight or ten small ships before Achtiar, now called Sebastiopolis. They had arrived there during the winter, with the design to excite an insurrection among the Tartars. To get rid of them at once, Suworow went on horseback to reconnoitre along the shore in the neighbourhood of Backtschisarey, accompanied by the Khan. Having observed the most essential

points, he extended his troops during the night along the two sides of the basin, and fortified the mouth of the port. Day put a stop to their labours, which were resumed in the following night. The pretext for these operations was, that the Turks, having disembarked to bring their cattle on shore, had killed a Cossac, who approached them ; and that a packet had been detained at Constantinople. The Turks perceiving there was a design to blockade them, quitted the port during the night, and went out to sea. These transactions took place in July.

The grand fleet of the Turks, which was still at sea, sent two deputies ashore, who, immediately on landing, made a formal protest, in the name of their commander, against the entrance of the Russians into the Crimea, and more especially against the presence of the Russian fleet in the Black Sea ; and expressed themselves with great severity, calling the Russian fleet corsairs, as that sea belonged exclusively to the Grand Seignior.

Suworow received these deputies with the greatest politeness, and at their departure delivered, to them and to the Khan an answer in writing, of which the substance was, that the Tartar government had demanded of the empress, the aid of Russian troops, and that consequently that government had no occasion for the assistance of the Turks ; that the Russian fleet cruised in those seas for their safety, and that as to the name of corsair, used by the Turkish admiral, he was responsible for that insult to his master, the Grand Seignior, who was the friend of Russia.

During their stay on shore, the deputies perceived, with much surprise and uneasiness, the fortifications erected in various places ; and, shortly after their departure, in August, the whole of the Turkish fleet appeared off the coast of the Crimea. It extended from Kertschi to Kaslow, and the little Russian fleet remained in the neighbourhood of Jenikala. The Turkish fleet were in want of fresh water, and were desirous of procuring some on shore ; but were prevented by Russian picquets, who were posted at every point, and ready to fire upon them. This refusal was given under a pretence, that the dryness of the season occasioned a want of water among the inhabitants ; so that the admiral was not allowed to procure fresh water for himself. Suworow had given strict orders on this subject, because he thought it might, perhaps, be an artifice of the Turks to send men on shore.

A fortnight after, the whole Turkish fleet once more gained the offing, and retired to Constantinople.

Suworow had been ordered by his court to transplant some Greek and Armenian christians from the Crimea into Russia. Among these were many persons of property, who paid a considerable revenue to the Khan. This delicate commission, therefore, required considerable circumspection, and as two ministers of the Khan strongly opposed the measure, Suworow placed a guard before their houses, with cannon, until they should desist. The metropolitan of the Greeks, the chief of the Armenians, and the curate of the Catholics, perfectly coincided in the views of Suworow, and in

the space of a month the Christians abandoned their dwellings, and emigrated with their property and cattle to Russia, where they established themselves in the government of Catherinoslow. This colony consisted of about twenty thousand men. Suworow procured for them as many post horses as possible, and other conveniences for travelling, distributing to the poor a ducat each, previous to their departure.

In October Suworow placed his troops in winter quarters, and having confided the command of the corps of Cuban, to Major-General Kayser, remained himself at Koslow.

In the course of the summer, the Attukays attacked them with a few hundred men, with an intention of surprizing and carrying off the horses of a squadron of hussars, which were at pasture. The captain of the squadron opposed them with his men on foot, who defended themselves with their carbines: but the Attukays used their rifle-barrelled guns so skilfully, that the whole squadron were cut to pieces. The infantry, who were intrenched, took no part in this affair, because their commanders were at variance;—the usual fate of small detachments, when employed without sufficient precautions. In other respects every thing succeeded perfectly well in that quarter, and the Circassians were repulsed with loss in almost every engagement. Colonels Hamborn and Stoeritsch attacked the great Abascians, and the territory of the Attukays with success. Although both sides sustained some loss, that of the enemy was much the greatest, and the Russians succeeded in their object of making their frontiers respected.

In the spring of 1779, Suworow took the field with a large body of troops, and established himself near Karasubasar, where he made them perform several manœuvres. Towards the month of June the Porte acknowledged Schaim Gheray as Khan of the Tartars of the Crimea, by a treaty concluded between the Russians and the Turks. This was what Russia demanded. The Grand Seignior, as Calif, sent Khan a sabre and a caftan, which the latter accepted ; but, contrary to custom, would not permit the deputies to put them on him, but ordered both the weapon and the dress to be placed in his cabinet.

At the end of June, the Russian troops marched from the Crimea and Cuban, on their return to Russia. The forts were abandoned, and the troops were reviewed and inspected in the various camps. Only a few thousand men were left in the environs of Kinburn and Jenikala, and the Aulic Counsellor Constantinow remained with the Khan, under the title of *Charge d'Affaires*.

At Pultava, Suworow received the command of the troops of Little Russias where the empress as a testimony of her approbation, gave him a snuff-box, with her portrait set in diamonds. Here he did not continue long, as he received orders, at the beginning of the winter, to return to Petersburg.

He was received there with the greatest attention, and the court gave him the command of a secret expedition on the Caspian Sea. The empress presented him with the star of the Order of Alexander, embellished with diamonds. It was the same she had herself worn on a habit of that order.

In March, 1780, Suworow went to Astracan, where he made the necessary dispositions, and procured the most exact information respecting Persia; in which empire some troubles had arisen, and a bloody war commenced between the Khans, after the death of Nadir Scah. He reconnoitred the Seven Mouths of the Wolga and the neighbouring coasts of the Caspian; but the expedition did not take place, although the corps and troops were already set down in the war-lists for that service. Suworow remained some months at Astracan, after which he received the command of the division of Casan, in which province he arrived in 1781, and continued there a considerable time.

## CHAP. VI.

*THE TARTARS TAKE THE OATH OF ALLEGIANCE TO RUSSIA. — EXPEDITION AGAINST THE NOGAYS BEYOND THE CUBAN.*

THE Sultan Mahomet Ghiray, being a sworn enemy to the Khan Schaim Ghiray, although his nearest relation, stirred up the Tartars against the Khan, who was then in his capitol. This revolt broke out in autumn, and the Khan fled, accompanied by his most faithful servants, to Kaffa, where he embarked, and arrived by the sea of Azof, at Petrowsk, a Ruslian fortress, built on the northern coast.

Towards the end of 1782, Prince Potemkin arrived at Cherfon, with a commission from the emprefs; and, having sent for Suworow, together with the division of Cafan, had an interview with the Khan at Petrowsk, and immediately set off for Petersburg.

The Kahn returned to Balktschisarey, accompanied by a considerable number of Ruslian troops, and the troubles were very speedily appeased. The malcontents had proclaimed his elder brother, Batyr Ghiray, khan in his place. The other brother, Arslar Ghiray, who commanded in Cuban, as seraskier of the Tarters of Noga, was at that time with his elder brother in the Crimea; and both they and their suites were carried off by the Rus-

fians, who, after keeping them prisoners for some time, embarked them on the Cuban, and restored them their liberty ; so that the whole terminated without much effusion of blood. But the rebel chief, Mahomet Ghiray, being arrested, was stoned, by order of the Khan, and several other Tartars, who had persisted in their rebellion, were punished with death.

Suworow now set off for Saint Demetrius, and for Azof, where he again took the command of the Cuban, at the beginning of the winter. The corps consisted of twelve battalions, with their artillery and heavy field-pieces, twenty squadrons of dragoons, six regiments of Cossacs, and the remainder of the militia of the Don, under their commander, Iloweiski.

At the end of May, Prince Potemkin again went to Cherson, sent for Suworow, deliberated with him, and returned to Saint Demetrius.

Six corps were now set on foot, besides two in Poland, to keep the Turks in awe. The first of these corps was stationed at Kotmisch, under the command of Prince Repnin ; the second at Humann, under Count Soltikew ; the third as a body of reserve in Little Russia ; the fourth as a troop of execution in the government of the Crimea, under Prince Potemkin himself ; the fifth was that of Cuban, under Suworow ; and the sixth in Caucasus, under Paul Potemkin.

The rendezvous of Suworow's troops was under the fortress of Jay, fifteen miles from Azof, in the

wilds of Cuban. He hastened the assemblage of his regiments, several of which had considerable marches to perform some coming from distant quarters near the Don, and others from the lines of Caucasus.

In the course of June, part of the troops having arrived in the neighbourhood of Jay, Suworow sent a proclamation, inviting the tribes of the Tartar hordes of Nogay to come and see him, treated them as old acquaintance, and gave them a grand gala in the wilds ; at which above three thousand Nogay Tartars were present. Their behaviour was friendly, and they returned home the following day.

As the troops arrived, they were sent forward without loss of time, to occupy with redoubts, the lines from Jay, as far as Tamann, where the principal points of Kopyl and Kurkey were. Suworow remained near Jay, with four battalions and their field-pieces, ten squadrons of dragoons, and two regiments of Cossacs.

On the 28th of June, which was the anniversary of the accession of the emperors, the Nogay hordes again assembled, with a numerous train of attendants, in consequence of being invited to the feast. They came to the number of five or six thousand, and the whole of the country round Jay was covered with their tents.

Schaim Ghiray, khan of the Nogay Tartars, now abdicated his dignity, at the same time notifying to the Tartars ; 1st. That he had come to

that resolution of his own accord ; 2d. That they were at liberty to choose his successor ; 3d. That he was determined to live and die among them. Prince Potemkin immediately published a manifesto from the empress, with a supplement in his own name, ordering all the Tartars to take the oath of fidelity to the empress. These manifestoes were also sent into the Cuban, a little before the 20th of June.

On this occasion, the troops were distributed in proper order, and in several divisions in the environs of Jay ; and when divine service was concluded, the Nogay chiefs assembled, and in the presence of Suworow, publicly swore, on the Koran, fidelity and homage to the empress. They afterwards went to their tribes, and made them take the same oath. The whole of this ceremony was performed with the greatest solemnity, amidst the continual discharge of artillery, and songs of joy. Several of the Tartars received appointments in the Russian service, -he oldest being made staff officers, and some others subalterns.

When the whole was concluded, a grand feast was given, in an immense open place in the wilds. The guests were seated on the ground, in the manner of the Tartars, and distributed in a number of small groups, all placed according to their rank. The dinner consisted, principally, of boiled and roast meat : a hundred oxen, and eight hundred sheep, were killed on the occasion ; and, as the laws of the Tartars did not permit them to drink wine, but only Sago brandy, five hundred eimers (thirty-two thousand pints) of that liquor were provided and the company allowed to drink at pleasure ;

besides which, English porter was served to the chiefs, who dined at Suworow's table. This party drank healths in a large cup, which was handed round the table, accompanied by discharges of cannon, and continual cries of joy, and of "Urra and Allah!" The other companies did the same, and mirth and happiness prevailed throughout the scene. Russians and Tartars were mingled together, and after dinner, races were performed, on all sides, between the Tartars and the Cossacs. Some of the Tartars died, in consequence of drinking to excess; which they consider as an honour in their great feasts. In the evening a second feast was served, which continued great part of the night.

A similar entertainment was given the following day, the 29th of June, which was that of St. Peter and St. Paul, the grand duke's patron, when a breakfast was given; after which, the Tartars took their leave, embracing the Russians as brethren.

Immediately after the oath had been taken, Suworow sent a courier to Prince Potemkin, with this act of faith and homage of the Tartars. Those of the Crimea soon followed their example.

When the Nogays were returned to Jay, their first step was to administer the same oath to their tribes, in the presence of the Russian staff and other officers.

Soon after, Suworow received a letter from the empress, to the following effect :

*To our Lieutenant-General de Suworow.*

“ In the affairs confided to your care, and particularly in the commission you have borne, under the direction of our General Prince Potemkin, for the re-union of the various nations of the Russian empire, you have shewn a zeal and activity for our service, which has excited our particular attention and favour. Willing to give you a public testimony of our approbation, we hereby grant you the grand cross of the equestrian order of Saint Wolodimir, of the first class, of which we send you the decorations. We command you to receive and wear them, according to the statutes. We are, affectionately,

“ CATHERINE.”

*Czarcosélo, July 28, 1783.*

As the constancy of the Nogays was wholly uncertain, and could not be relied on, it was proposed to remove all their tribes, by small degrees to the waste lands of Uralsk, and disarm them whenever an opportunity should offer. A very extensive cordon was formed from the river Jay to the middle of the Don ; and, in the course of July, all the Tartars of Nogay assembled near Jay.

Here it will be proper to speak more at large of this nation, so celebrated in the ancient times ; a nation, with whom, five hundred years ago, Genghis Khan conquered Asia, as far as the confines of China ; and among whom Tamerlane was born. The Nagay Tartars pretend to come from the Uf-

becks. Tschutschchi, eldest son of Gengis Khan, being with his brothers in China, at the siege of a fortress, was reprimanded by his father for some faults committed there. Enraged at this, he fled to the Kuptschacs, and though they already had a khan, took part in the government, in which he shewed great penetration. He afterwards continued as sovereign over this nation, who, at that time, had in their power the greater part of Russia ; their frontiers extending along the Wolga, as far as Penza, Arsamas, and the great forest of Muron, where entrenchments, are still to be seen. He built a residence for himself, at Sarayscheck, on the river Atkoban, nine miles from the rich and extensive city of Jarizin, for which purpose he sent for architects from Moscow. The ruins of some of the streets, and large squares, where the Russian princes were obliged to pay their tribute, are still in existence. The successors of Tschutschchi governed with moderation, and did not interfere in matters of religion ; the patriarch retained his authority, and the laws were on the same footing as before. The Russian princes continued to submit to the Kuptschacs till the time of the celebrated Mamay, who was, properly, a grand vizir among the Tartars ; and who, having carried his arms into the interior of Russia, within fifteen wersts of Moscow, was completely beaten and repulsed by the great Prince Demetrius Donskoy. From that period, intestine division, and epidemic disorders successively depopulated their hordes ; which, originally, consisted of several hundred thousands. At length the Czar Iwan Wolfilowitsch, who made himself master of the kingdoms of Kasan and Astrakan, repulsed these Tartars in the wilds of Uralsk,

behind the Wolga ; and, towards the close of the last century, several of them, traversing the wilds of Cuban, fled through the Crimea, to take refuge in Bessarabia, and placed themselves under the protection of the Turks.

Bady Khan, second son of Gengis, was to bring all the rest of Russia entirely under subjection to him. He treated the princes who submitted, with great moderation, but was extremely rigorous towards those who resisted his authority. The celebrated Grand Duke, Alexander Newski de Woldimir refused to wait on him when he passed, and as he persisted in his refusal three times, he was required to make satisfaction by fire ordeal. This he also refused, and went to the Khan, saying, “ I “ am willing to acknowledge you as sovereign, but “ cannot honour your gods, as I only believe in “ one.” The Khan was so well satisfied with this firm answer, that he left the prince in possession of his estates, and afterwards added to them.

This Khan traversed Poland, and his army advanced as far as the frontiers of Silesia. Wherever these Nomades passed, they left colonies behind them, branches of which are still to be found near Moscow, and in Poland. From them are descended the families of Beliak and Korizki.

The tribes of the Nogay Tartars were distinguished by the following names : the Upper and Lower Gediffsans, the Great and Little Tshamburluks, the Gedischkulers to the right and left, the Kuptschaks, and the Akermans. These last had been much diminished by a violent epidemical disorder, which

prevailed among them when they emigrated from Bessarabia to Cuban, in the last war. These nations, who were once so formidable, and who were able to send a hundred thousand cavalry into the field, are now reduced to less than one-third their ancient population. They have always continued to pursue a pastoral life ; living on the produce of their flocks, and eat rice instead of bread ; as they began very late to cultivate wheat. Their dress is very simple ; and a new sheep's skin serves them for holiday clothes. They have few good fire-arms, and, in general, make great use of bows and arrows : they have also javelins made of a bad kind of wood, which is found in these deserts. They likewise arm themselves with a sabre, and many of them use their knives as poniards. In battle, they also employ large hammers, which they fasten to their hands with a thong of leather. Such was the manner of life of the Nogay Tartars, the descendants of the celebrated Gengis Khan.

Their march towards the Don, and the wilds of Uralsk, was divided into several columns, under an escort of Russian troops. At the end of July, when they were half way to the Don, Schaim Gheray arrived at Tamann, together with his suite, by the strait of Jenikala, where he circulated seditious letters, and secretly stirred up the Nogay hordes. Hence arose a considerable revolt, and the rebels retired to the river Cuban, where they met with resistance from those who remained faithful to Russia ; among whom the commander of the Gedissans, and old Muffabeg, chief of the Tschamburluks, deserve to be particularly distinguished. They had many engagements with their countrymen, in which

much blood was spilt, and Mussabeg himself was severely wounded in the neck with a sabre.

Suworow was unwilling to use force for the restoration of tranquility. The Tartars marched against the line of forts ; and, to the number of several thousand men, advanced to the camp, without suffering themselves to be broken. On attempting to pass a morass, where an officer was posted with a company of fusileers, and a piece of artillery, by whom they were resisted, they engaged him, and advanced with their chief, who pressed forward with the utmost fury. The little platoon, however, defended themselves long enough to receive the reinforcement of a squadron of dragoons, who were encamped at the distance of a mile. An hour after Colonel Telegin, who was at a still greater distance, arrived in the utmost haste, with two battalions, who immediately broke the enemy's rank, and defeated and dispersed the Tartars. This engagement cost them five hundred men. The post which Colonel Telegin had abandoned, was also a very important pass ; the Nogays took advantage of the opportunity, and several thousand of them traversed the morass, and fled into the country of the Temirgois, in the Naurus, behind the river Cuban ; but being pursued, they abandoned their immense herds of cattle, and removed to a greater distance. The booty consisted of about thirty thousand horses, forty thousand horned cattle, and above two hundred thousand sheep.

Suworow, who was in the middle of the line, made a junction with Lieutenant-Colonel Leschetzsch, inspector-general of the Nogays. Here he

was informed, that Taw Sultan Murfa had just been plotting a new conspiracy. This Murfa, governor of the young sultan, who was nephew to Schaim Gheray, was desirous of raising his pupil to the dignity of Khan, and had already been the frequent instigator of revolts. The conspiracy was soon broke out, and *kanfsanka* was the watchword they adopted. They packed up their *kibiks* (tents), placed the whole on carriages, together with the least of their children, and drove their cattle before them, having, previous to their departure, massacred the Russians who had been left to watch them, and who were unable to save themselves by flight. The troops of the cordon, who were the nearest, hastened to attack them, but were obliged to retreat from the inferiority of their numbers. Taw Sultan attacked Jay, at the head of a few thousand men, and though repulsed with loss, continued his march towards the river Cuban, and collected the rest of the Nogays, as also some of the chiefs of those who had continued faithful; and, among the rest, Halli Effendi, with his wife, whom he carried away. Most of the faithful Tartars encamped in the environs of Jay.

In August, Suworow assembled his troops in one body, near Kopyl, and caused barracks to be prepared for the approaching winter quarters. At the end of the month, the Tartars made an attack beyond the Cuban with ten thousand men, and traversed the wilds to fall upon Jay, where a sufficient garrison had been left. They attacked the entrenchments, during three following days, with so much impetuosity, that they lost four hundred men, and had two hundred taken prisoners in a sally. They

then took to flight, but were able to carry off several of their men who had remained behind.

In the course of September, Prince Potemkin, generalissimo of all the forces, ordered Suworow to arrest Schain Gheray, at Taimann, to put his corps into winter-quarters on the Don, and to put an end to the operations he intended to undertake against the Nogays.

The first of these measures did not take place. Suworow had already left Kopyl when the orders arrived, and was under cover in a wood two miles from that place. Major-General Jellagin was then at Teman with Colonel Holle. To him Suworow immediately dispatched a courier, who, passing the night at Kopyl, where he was to be joined by the necessary escort, was obliged to wait till the next day, because General Philippow was in bed, and had given orders that he should not be disturbed. This general gave the courier an escort of about thirty Cossacs, who were cut to pieces on the road, by above a hundred Abascians, and the courier was obliged to return. Ifaiow, colonel of a regiment of Cossacs, was ordered, with the utmost haste, to join Jelagin, near Teman, and he accordingly set forward on the march.

In the night previous to his arrival, Schaim Gheray was informed of the fate which threatened him, and, having with him a numerous body of men, speedily mounted his horse, and, together with his people, hastened to the banks of the Cuban, which is but two miles from thence, where he found some boats, which Jelagin had not removed ; he

knowing nothing of the project, and having always been treated with politeness by Shaim Gheray. Jelagin and Isaiof pursued him; but he had already passed the river. In vain they called after him, but he answered their solicitations with excuses, and retired into Circassia.

The detachment appointed for the expedition on the left bank of the Cuban, consisted of sixteen companies of infantry, in four platoons, each of which had two light field-pieces, sixteen squadrons of dragoons, with the same number of pieces of artillery, and four regiments of Cossacs. The commanding officer Iloweiski was ordered to march directly towards the Cuban, with twelve regiments of Cossacs, each five hundred men strong, and to make a junction with Suworow at an appointed time and place.

This corps had performed a march of thirty miles. They ascended the right of the Cuban, always advancing by night, and in the day time halting in the woods. They proceeded in the greatest silence, and without signals, because the Circassians had strong picquets on the left banks, and they were anxious to avoid discovery. For the same reason, Suworow having before met a Turkish messenger from Sutschuk, replied to his enquiries : "It is a "small detachment which remained behind, and "which I am conducting to the corps of Cauca- "sus."

The Grand Quarter-Master Foedorow was on horseback in the van, and as there was no road along the bank, he posted two Cossacs at every

quarter of a league as guides. When they arrived opposite to the country occupied by the Attukays, on the left bank, they found so little wood, that they could not conceal their march. The river, too, was very narrow in that part, and the Attukays fired across it, both with muskets and bows and arrows. They did not, however, much annoy the Russians, who were careful not to answer their fire. Towards noon, Suworow sent for the Bey who commanded there, and severely reprimanded him for this conduct ; and the Bey dispersed the offenders by driving them away with whips. As to the destination of the troops, the same explanation was given to the Bey as to the Turkish messenger from Sutschuk.

At length the corps approached the river Laba, which arises in Mount Caucasus, in the province of Cuban. Here they met with no more wood, and the troops concealed themselves, by encamping in hollows ; but were not molested by any enemy whatever.

Not far from the bank were some hills of considerable height. Suworow ascended them, and perceived some Nogays making hay ; and when he saw the distant smoke of their fires, he was fully confirmed in the information he had received, that this was the place where the Nogay Tartars were encamped. The Russians halted during the day. In the afternoon, Iloweiski, the commanding officer on the Don, joined them according to appointment, with his twelve regiments of Cossacs, and at dusk they marched towards the right bank of the

Cuban, which in that part is flat, and covered with fine forests. On their arrival the moon shone very bright.

In this place the Cuban is a full quarter of a mile broad, and as they had no pontoons, they prepared to ford, or swim across it, and sent forward some Cossacs to find out the fordable parts. The infantry stripped themselves, and forded the river naked, carrying their arms and cartouch boxes on their heads, being frequently up to their shoulders in water. The cavalry took the clothes of the infantry on the cruppers of the horses, and carried the ammunition two by two, that the powder might not be wetted. Thus they passed the river in companies and in squadrons; the horse crossing somewhat higher, to break the force of the current. In the middle of the stream was a spacious island, where they halted for a short time, when, in the same order, they gained the left bank, which they found very steep, and covered with rocks. Even the Cossacs had great difficulty to get on shore on horseback, and above all the dragoons, who carried the ammunition; and it required great labour to hoist up the artillery, and the rest of the baggage, with ropes. The infantry climbed up, and dressed themselves, but the banks were so full of rocks, that they could scarcely make use of the intrenching tools which they had brought with them.

All being now in order, they began to march. Having proceeded nearly a mile, they came to a morass, which it was necessary to pass. They ascended the right bank of the Laba, and having proceeded another mile, the van guard met a pa-

trole, whom they made prisoners, and who served them as guides.

The next morning they surprized the Nogays. The Cossacs whose country on the Don that nation had formerly ravaged, now took the most dreadful revenge. The massacre continued till noon. This event took place near an old ruined castle in the neighbourhood of Kermentschuk.

After halting an hour, they advanced two miles farther. When they arrived at the forest of Farisch, which extends as far as Mount Caucasus, the Russians attacked the rest of the Nogay Tartars. The engagement was as vigorous as that of the morning, though many Tartars took to flight as soon as they were informed of this sudden attack. But the Termigois and the Nawrus, in whose country this action happened, and who defended the Nogays, suffered a considerable loss. The prince of the Nawrus was killed, and his daughter led away captive.

The light troops fought on both banks of the La-ba. The engagement continued until the evening, when the victorious army reposed in the field of battle, which was in a plain; and the next day pursued the enemy to a distance of some miles, though without being able to overtake them. The conquerors returned on the following day, and re-passed the Cuban.

From the time of Mamay, of whom we have spoken above, and who was defeated by Demerius Donskoy, the Nogays had never been so severely

handled as on this occasion, which happened on the 1st of October. In the two battles, about four thousand persons, men and women remained upon the field of battle, which extended a mile and a half along their tents. The Cossacs, according to the custom of those nations, carried with them a great number of young children.

When the Russians returned to the right bank of the Cuban, the commanding officer Iloweiski returned with his troops towards the Don. At that time, the troops had already set off for Kopyl to go into winter quarters in the same canton, agreeably to their orders. The corps detached from Suworow did the same, and that general retained only a few companies of the infantry, two pieces of cannon, a squadron of dragoons, and a regiment of Cossacs, with which he marched across the wilds of the fortress of Jay. He had above forty German miles to go, and more than ten rivers to cross. In fording these, his troops were frequently up to their middle in water, and were obliged to throw bridges over the deeper channels. The want of wood obliged them to make these bridges of reeds and turf, which lasted at the utmost but four-and-twenty hours; as the current destroyed them; and when the troops did not make haste to pass, it became necessary to make others. Some Tartars who acted as guides across the wilds, directed their march too much to the northward, which caused them to make a false march of ten miles. At length their provisions began to fail them; and, on the last day, were entirely consumed.

At the end of October, they arrived at fort Jay, where Suworow made the necessary dispositions. There had always been a sufficient number of men in the castle and fort of Jay, because the chiefs of the Nogay hordes were there under the inspection of Lieutenant-Colonel Leschkewitsh; and after the separation of the Seraskier, Aritan Gheray, his successor, Hallil Effendi, governor-general of the Tartar tribes which had remained behind, encamped in the neighbourhood.

When Suworow arrived, he paid some visits, and particularly to his friend Murfa Bey, prince of the Tschamberluks, who was a venerable old man. He had not yet recovered the wound in his neck; but was highly gratified to see Suworow in good health. He embraced him with tears in his eyes, and called him his son.

Suworow did not stay many days. In the beginning of November, he went by Azof to St. Demetrius, leaving, as a garrison in the castle, a company of grenadiers, one of fusileers, and a regiment of Cossacs. There were twelve pieces of cannon in the fort.

Except Taw Sultan and a few others, almost all those who had fled towards the left bank of the Cuban, wrote to Suworow with white flags, confessing their error, and promising that in the spring they would return to their former positions, which many of them actually did.

The Russians, after their departure from that country, being much dispersed, were attacked

throughout the winter by the Circassians, and especially by the pagans of Abascia. Many of the Russians were killed, and others carried off and sold as slaves in Natolia. At length, however, they assembled in greater numbers, and put themselves in a state of defence.

Among the Tartars who returned, was the ci-devant Hallil Effendi, who had presented himself with some of his followers before the end of the autumn.

There are at present on the north coast of the sea of Azof, about three thousand kibiks, or families of these Tartars, each family, or kibik, consisting of four or five persons. After their emigration from Bessarabia into the wilds of Cuban, there remained about one thousand families under the protection of the Turks, and on the left bank of the Cuban, in the wilds of Attukay, nearly one thousand more; whom Bajazel Murfa promised to remove to join the rest. Several of their families became poor in consequence of changing their residence, the length of their journey having obliged them to abandon their cattle, in which the whole wealth of these wandering nations consists, or to part with them for very inconsiderable prices.

In the course of the autumn, the plague made some ravages at Cherson, and spread as far as the Don. It continued till Christmas, but such precautions were taken, that not more than a hundred persons fell victims to it on the banks of the Don, of whom not one-third were soldiers.

Suworow passed the winter at St. Demetrius, where the chiefs of the Tartars who remained behind, and with whom he was on friendly terms, frequently visited him. Muffa Bey had now recovered from his wound. Mechmed Bey, the chief of the Godissans, often joked with him at table, on his being still inclined to marry ; and Suworow one day asking him whether he was serious, Murfa Bey replied with much simplicity, "Mechmed Bey is right ;" and immediately requested the general to make him a present of a beautiful Tartar girl of sixteen years of age, whom he wished to marry. Suworow bought a young Tartar slave of a Coffac for one hundred rubles, and sent her to Muffa Bey, who accordingly married her. He lived some years after this transaction, and died at the age of a hundred and eight years ; having almost reached the age of Attila, king of the Huns. He retained the uses of his faculties till the last, except that his eyes could scarcely bear the light. He was a man of a strong complexion, almost constantly on horseback ; and, notwithstanding his great age, an excellent companion. He was very much attached to cleanliness, but despised all luxury. He was faithful in his friendships, and the friend of the poor, and his greatest pleasure was to be their benefactor. He was a great eater, and at meals drank pure fago brandy. His servants took him from table, and carried him to bed like a prince. Suworow regarded him with great esteem and attachment.

The ci-devant Khan Schaim Gheray, who had fled towards the left bank of the Cuban, returned in the spring of 1784, into the Crima, by Taman and Jenikala, and set off for Woronitsch, which

was the place of his destination. He passed some years in Russia, and afterwards returned. The Turks received him at Chotzim in a manner suited to the dignity of a Khan. He then went to Constantinople, but was not permitted to enter that city, and was sent into banishment at Rhodes, where he was put to death in the most perfidious manner. According to the laws of Turkey, he could not be condemned to death ; the Khans, and all the descendants of Gengis, being expressly excepted from all capital punishments ; but it was alledged, as a pretext, that he was no longer Khan, since he had voluntarily abandoned that dignity.

In the summer of the same year, 1784, Suworow left the Nogays, and set off for Moscow. He had gained their friendship, and they had great reliance on his promises. But unfortunately this confidence could not be mutual ; for no dependence can be placed on those nations, who are all equally inconstant with the rest of the Nomads, and know no law but their own will. Their conduct is determined by books of predictions, or dreams ; which, with them, are sufficient motives for violating the most solemn engagements.

Suworow went first to the division of Valadimir ; and, in 1785, to that of Saint Petersburg. On his arrival at the capital, he was received with the greatest distinction, and loaded with favours by the empress.

## CHAP. VII.

**I**N the beginning of the month of September, 1786, General Suworow, a short time after his promotion to the rank of commander-in-chief, quitted Petersburg for Kremenschuck.—Prince Potemkin was at that time there on a visit to his new government of Catherinoslaw and Taurida, which, a short time before, had been called the Crimea. In every place where the prince passed some time, every one was eager to pay him homage, and brilliant entertainments were prepared for his amusement. He was received with universal joy as the harbinger of her imperial majesty, whose visit to these provinces was impatiently expected by the people ; and, for whose arrival, he had made the necessary preparations.

Accordingly, in the month of February, 1787, the empress arrived at Kiowie, attended by a numerous and magnificent court, and accompanied by several ministers of foreign powers in alliance with her. Prince Potemkin and General Suworow set off at the same time ; and Field-Marshal Romanzow was already at Kiowie, in the character of governor-general. Many travellers of distinction resorted thither on this extraordinary occasion ; and, as the imperial court remained there during several weeks, this town became the temporary residence of all the nobility of the province.

The King of Poland came no farther than Kanief, on the Dnieper, as, according to the consti-

tutional laws of his country, he could not pass its frontiers. He there received every mark of respect from the attendants on the Russian court, and particularly distinguished General Suworow, whom he had known during the war of the confederation. A few days after his arrival, he paid a visit to the empress on board a vessel on the Dnieper.

During the residence of the court at Kiowie, Suworow received the command of a corps on the Bog, to which he had not hitherto been attached. This arrangement was made by the special order of the empress, as her majesty was desirous that he should always be on duty near her.

Immediately after the festival of Easter, the empress continued her journey to Taurida. The Emperor, Joseph the Second, accompanied her, under the title of Count Falenstein, and as he always wore a white uniform, many persons, and Suworow among the rest, took him at first for a Russian officer. This monarch, who was well acquainted with the extraordinary talents and character of Suworow, frequently conversed with him, upon political and military affairs, during his residence at Cherson.

When the empress actually set out for Taurida, Suworow took the command of a body of cavalry at Blankisna, about ten miles from Cherson, on the road to Pultawa; and when her imperial majesty returned from thence, he appeared at the head of his corps, to do her all military honour. He then escorted her to Pultawa, where she graciously dismissed him, with the present of a box enriched with her cypher in diamonds.

Prince Potemkin afterwards returned to his government with the title of Tauritschefski, governor of Taurida ; and, having made the necessary arrangements there, he set out to visit his estate at Smeale, which he had just purchased of Prince Lubomirski, on the frontiers of Poland. General Suworow accompanied him thither, and left him in the month of August, to take the command of the corps of Cherson and Kinburn.

During this journey of the empress, Bulgakow, the Russian minister at Constantinople, came from that place, in order to pay his court to his imperial mistress. This mark of respect, which could not be well avoided, and seemed to be nothing more than what the etiquette of his situation required, gave umbrage to the Porte ; whose uneasiness soon became very apparent. Within a few days after his arrival, Bulgakow received information that his presence was absolutely necessary at Constantinople : he, accordingly, returned there, with all possible speed, and found the predominant party in the Divan disposed to war.

For several years an Ottoman fleet had regularly been seen to cruize for a short time before Ocza-kow ; but it was far more considerable than it had hitherto been in the summer of 1787. It consisted of twelve ships of the line, seven frigates, eight chebecs, five kirlangithsches, and twenty-five gun-boats.

The Russian fleet at Cherson was very inferior in number and equipment to that of the Turks : it was moored on the western bank of the Liman, at

five miles from Cherson, on the side of Oczakow. Two ships had indeed been lately launched at Cherson, in the presence of the emperor, which were called the Joseph and Wolodimir ; but both the one and the other were without equipage.

Suworow, with his usual attention, examined the country that surrounded Cherson, and made the necessary distribution of troops, in case the Turks should attempt an attack by land ; or effect a descent from their ships. He fortified with great care, the bank of the Dnieper and the Bog, to guard the fords of those rivers ; and paid particular attention to the peninsula of Kinburn. He had under his command in that quarter twelve squadrons of light horse, ten squadrons of dragoons, four regiments of Cossacs, and four battalions of fusileers, who formed a camp in the vicinity of Kinburn.

This town is but ill defended by its walls, which are surrounded by a glacis. The ditch is but shallow and it is impossible to encrease its depth ; as the ground is sandy, and water is found very near the surface. On one side of the glacis is the mouth of the Dnieper, and, on the other side, the Black Sea. There was in the bay of Kinburn no force but a single frigate and a chaloupe of twelve guns.

There was a regular correspondence between Kinburn and Oczakow, as they were only separated by a short passage of two miles across the mouth of the Dnieper. Colonel Dunzelmann, who commanded at Kinburn, had occasion to send an officer to the Bacha of Oczakow. When the official conversation was concluded, the Bacha ordered his

people to retire, and enquired of the officer concerning the news of the day ; who having replied, that he had none to communicate, the honest open-hearted Bacha informed him that the turbulent heads at Constantinople had declared war against Russia, and that the Turkish fleet would soon be in motion, to attack the two vessels in the bay of Kinburn. To complete his liberal procedure, the Bacha ordered a Tschautsch (a kind of patrole) to attend the officer as an escort ; and the event proved the necessity of the precaution ; as he was attacked on his return by two Turks, whom the guard repulsed and conducted him safe to Kinburn.

In the afternoon of the following day, August 19, 1787, the intelligence of the Bacha was realized, for the frigate and gun-boat were fiercely attacked by several Turkish vessels. The engagement lasted some time ; and the gun-boat not making sufficient way in following the frigate, was in danger of being cut off ; but the officer who commanded her, having fired a broad-side with such effect at the vessel that was first in pursuit, as to sink it ; the rest did not venture to risk a similar fate. Another of the Turkish vessels also foundered ; so that the Russian frigate and chaloupe, though they had greatly suffered, at length escaped, and retreated to Gluboka, where they were repaired.

Thus did hostilities break out on the part of the Turks, without a preliminary declaration of war. From that moment the Russians kept themselves upon their guard ; and employed every necessary precaution. Suworow accordingly took the com-

mand of Kinburn upon himself, and ceded that of Cherson to General Bilikow. The whole of the troops under his command amounted to about thirty thousand men.

As the Turks had a very superior force at sea, and were in a condition to give an irreparable blow to the naval force of Russia in the Black Sea, the first care of Suworow was to secure the bay of Gluboka, and the marine of Cherson. He accordingly ordered a battery to be erected before Gluboka, of twenty pieces of cannon, eighteen and twenty-four pounders, to command both the entrances ; and five lesser batteries on the island below Cherson, in order to produce a cross fire.

The Turks took a vessel laden with provisions, and at the mouth of the Bog they surprized, in a public house, about twenty Cossacs and Ukraine peasants, who were either cut in pieces or made prisoners.

They now commenced the bombardment of Kinburn, which continued several days without interruption. Three of their bombs fell in the barrack of the commandant, and the tent of General Suworow was carried away by the explosion of a shell.

The place, however, made a very vigorous defence. Two of the enemy's frigates, which had ventured to approach too near, suffered very severely for their temerity ; and ships of the line afterwards kept at a greater distance. One of them was blown up by the negligence of some of its crew.

At the close of this month Admiral Woinowitsch set sail from Sewastopol for the coast of Varna. His fleet consisted of two vessels of the line, three frigates, and twelve small vessels ; but was so unfortunate as to encounter a violent storm, which dispersed his ships. A line-of-battle ship, of sixty-six guns, which had suffered very much in its masts and rigging, was taken by the Turks ; and a frigate went to the bottom with its whole equipage. The admiral had scarce collected his scattered fleet, when he was attacked by the Turks, and an engagement followed : but the Russians, notwithstanding their losses, and the bad condition of their ships, obtained the advantage of the enemy, and happily reached their destination.

The gun-boats of the Russians, and their double chaloupes, presented themselves at some distance from Gluboka, to tempt the Turks towards them, that they might seize the favourable moment of attacking them. The stratagem succeeded ; the Turks commenced their manoeuvres with their chaloupes and other vessels ; but, after an engagement, which was attended with no signal consequences on either side, they were driven back into Oczakow.

On the thirtieth of September, the fire of the Turks, upon Kinburn, was better sustained than it had hitherto been, and continued, without interruption, to a very late hour of the night. Suworow, from his observations on the enemy's movements, conjectured that they actually meditated a descent upon the island. He accordingly prepared himself for the event, and forbade a single gun to be fired, on the side of the Russians.

On the morrow, at break of day, the Turks recommenced their bombardment ; but the town made no return, nor was the morning gun fired. A great number of balls and bombs fell in the camp, and several tents were carried away. As that day was a festival of the Greek church, Suworow attended mass, with a considerable number of his officers.

In the mean time thirty chaloupes, full of troops, ascended the Liman, to about three miles above Kinburn ; but they were no sooner disembarked, than they were discovered by some Cossacs, who were posted upon a hill of sand. They first imagined the Turks to be deserters ; but when they found their mistake, an engagement ensued, and the invaders were driven back to their vessels. The Turks had supposed, that Suworow would dispatch a detachment against these people, who were devoted to destruction, and proportionably weaken his garrison. But he was not the dupe of such a stratagem.

At nine in the morning, the Turks began to disembark their troops. The engineer Lafitte directed the operation ; which the Russians beheld without offering the least interruption. All their vessels, great and small, approached at different distances ; and, to cover them, they had formed a strong stoccado, at the point of the peninsula, and at half a mile from the place.

The troops which were employed on the descent were the flower of the garrison of Oczakow, amounting to six thousand men, and were entirely

infantry. The Bacha, who commanded, had, in order to invigorate their courage, ordered all the transport-vessels to return, that they might have no other alternative, but to do their duty, as became them, or to find destruction in the sea, if they fled from the land. The detachment which the Russians had to oppose them, was somewhat less than a thousand infantry, which was afterwards reinforced by four regiments of Cossacs, and about a thousand cavalry.

The Turks were no sooner disembarked, than they began to form entrenchments; but the water gained upon them so fast, from a cause which has been already explained, that they could not give sufficient depth to their works. They, however, supplied this defect, by filling the sacks, with which they had the precaution to provide themselves, with sand, and they served as a rampart.

At noon, their dervises offered up the accustomed prayers, and the troops made their pious ablutions in the Black Sea. They then returned to their entrenchments, and proceeded in completing their works.

Suworow had given orders, that not a single shot should be discharged, or any sortie made, till the enemy were within two hundred yards of the glacis. The signal ordered for these operations, was a salute of artillery, from all the polygons which were on that side of the place.

At one, the Turkish advanced guard appeared at the distance named in the general's order; when

the signal was instantly given, and as quickly obeyed. Colonel Ifeiow with his regiment, a regiment of Cossacs, and two squadrons of light horse, turned the place to the left of the Black Sea, and fell upon the advanced guard, who were bringing up the scaling-ladders. They consisted of some hundred men, and were cut in pieces, or put to the sword. The Bacha, who refused to surrender, shared the same fate. He was well acquainted with the town of Kinburn, and had fixed on this side of it, from knowing it to be the least capable of resistance.

In the mean time, Orlow's regiment of infantry, fellied forth from the place, with the cavalry ; passed through the right wing of the enemy ; threw themselves into the intrenchments, and with the bayonet, dispatched all who opposed them.

The Turkish ships cannonaded, with more than six hundred pieces of artillery, the front and flanks of the troops, which had come forth from the town, but without any very destructive effect.

At this time, the Colonels of the Orlow and Illoweiski regiments arrived with them, and followed the cavalry towards the Black Sea. They fought with infinite spirit, as well as perseverance, and acquired great honour. Suworow now ordered the two battalions of Kafelow to advance, which composed the reserve. Major-General Reck, who commanded them, was dangerously wounded in the leg, and carried off the field. But neither these battalions, nor two squadrons of light-horse, who supported them, could resist the force and fierceness

of the enemy : they faced about and fled, and the Turks, with their sabres and their poniards, made sad havock among them.

Suworow had a very narrow escape ; having had his horse shot under him by a cannon-ball ; he addressed himself to a Turk, for an horse which he had just taken, and whom he mistook for a Cossac, as the Turks had only disembarked infantry. But he now found his mistake, and the sabre was uplifted, which would have destroyed him, if its descending stroke had not been arrested by the thrust of a bayonet, from a fusileer of Nouikow.

The situation of the Russians became very critical. They were overpowered by numbers, and compelled to retire to the Glacis. From time to time they appeared to recover themselves, and to gain ground ; but the Turks having received a large reinforcement, their efforts failed ; the carnage became general ; the dead, the dying, and the wounded, were seen on all sides ; and the hostile troops were so confounded, that, on both sides, the artillery were commanded to discontinue its operations.

While the bloody career of slaughter was proceeding, a Turkish chebec and gun-boat, which approached within reach of the cannon of the place, blew up, with a most horrid explosion.

The day was now fast declining, when ten squadrons of light horse arrived from their post, at the distance of four miles behind Kinburn : but, from the nature of the ground, they were compelled to

charge the Turks in a mass. At this time, the infantry began to recover itself; and the Cossacs coming, from the sea-side, upon their flanks, the Turks began, in their turn, to give way to this united force. They opposed a defence full of vigour, which was rouzed almost to madness by their enraged Dervises, who mingled in the battle, and excited the Mahometans to combat. These men became the martyrs of their zeal, and the death they inflamed others to seek, they themselves found.

The night now came on, and there was no moon. At this time there arrived a small battalion of Muruni of three hundred men, who came from the side of Cherson, worn out with fatigue; and two companies of reserve, employed to guard the baggage behind Kinburn. This reinforcement, however, decided the battle.

The Turks, finding themselves driven back towards the sea, turned upon their pursuers in despair. Their last fire continued for about half an hour, when they were totally defeated, being cut to pieces, or driven into the sea. Some of the fugitives, however, who, when they saw that their run-a-way comrades were lost in the waves, attempted, but in vain, to return to the charge. Others flattered themselves that they should escape by swimming to Oczakow, but they likewise perished.

About ten at night, this bloody action, which had lasted nine hours, was terminated. Twice the Russians were overpowered by numbers; nevertheless, the far greater part of the Turkish army

was left on the field, or perished in the sea. A very small number of them escaped.

As night was approaching, Suworow received a musket shot in the left arm. The wound discharged a great quantity of blood, and there was no surgeon about him to dress it. He went, therefore, to the sea side; and an officer of Coffacs, of Kutenikow, who, followed with some men, washed his wound with sea water, and bound it up with his cravat. With this dressing he re-mounted his horse, and returned to the field of battle. The Coffac officer was himself wounded, as were all those who were about Suworow's person during the engagement. Tischenko, a light-horse man, was his orderly attendant for the day, and was the only person, so situated, who escaped free from hurt. He was made serjeant-major, as a recompence for the services of the day.

When all was over, and the troops were ordered to re-enter the place, the cannonade suddenly re-commenced, but it lasted a very short time. A body of the Turks, who were not in the action, conceiving that the place was entirely without a garrison, hoped to take it by an attack from behind, but they were soon repulsed.

Suworow found himself extremely weak on his return to Kinburn. His wound was dressed by a surgeon, who wished him to take refreshments; but he was too much fatigued, and he grew rather worse after the operation.

This battle cost the Russians two hundred killed, among whom were many superior officers, and three hundred wounded.

Of the army of six thousand men, which the Turks had disembarked, not more than seven hundred escaped. The rest were either slain or drowned. Among the dead there was a French engineer: As to Lafitte, who directed the descent, he disappeared before it was night.

Major-General Islinief, who was at the distance of eight miles behind Kinburn, found it impossible to reach it, with his reserve of ten squadrons of dragoons, till the action was over.

Whether the Turks had exhausted all their ammunition, or were discouraged by the bad success of their enterprize, is not a question that demands a moment's consideration; but they discontinued firing upon the place, and to the time of their departure for the Dardanelles, their artillery was silent; and the tour of the peninsula might be made at any time without the least danger.

On the morrow, at break of day, Suworow, who was perfectly recovered, observed from the ramparts, that a body of Turks were employed at the point of the island in removing their dead and wounded. He therefore detached Ifeiow with his Cossacs to drive them away; and, in a short time after, he saw a small Turkish transport founder, from being overcharged with people.

The whole of this day was passed in burying the dead, and attending to the wounded. On the morrow, divine service was celebrated, and public thanks returned to God for this signal victory.—At an early hour of the morning, the troops were ordered under arms ; and were drawn up, in different detachments, from the point of the peninsula to a considerable distance from the town. They accompanied the *Te Deum* with three discharges of musketry and heavy artillery. The greater part of the wounded soldiers insisted on being admitted into the ranks on this occasion : and Suworow enjoyed this glorious spectacle from the ramparts of the town. As the front of the line presented itself towards Oczakow, great numbers of Turks were seen running to the shore, on hearing the thunder of the cannonade, which celebrated their defeat.

The design of the Turks, from the commencement of hostilities, was to make themselves masters of Kinburn. It was but a weak place, and the possession of its peninsula would have given them a very great advantage in any future attempts they might meditate, for the retaking of Cherson and the Crimea. They also entertained the hope, that, by taking it, they should have had the power to disperse, if not to burn the fleet of Gluboka and the marine of Cherson.

The Russian fleet at Gluboka consisted of two new ships, not put in commission, called the Joseph and the Woldemir, two other vessels of fifty-four guns, one of forty guns, three gallies, three gun-boats, and twenty small vessels, including the transports.

The Turkish fleet before Oczakow, consisted of three ships of the line, one frigate, eight chebecs, and thirty-two gallies and gun-boats.

But the ill-success of this enterprise, in which the Turks engaged with such sanguine expectations of success, put an end to all their hopes. As soon as the news of their defeat reached Constantinople, the consternation was general, nor was it lessened by the reflection, that the war had been commenced in an unusual way, and contrary to the practice of civilized nations, without a previous declaration of war. The Porte flattered itself that the Russians would not have had time to prepare for the defence of Kinburn; and that it would not be possible for that place to hold out a day, against the flower of the garrison of Oczakow.

The empress gave a very distinguished mark of her satisfaction to Suworow, in addressing to him the following letter, written with her own hand.

*Petersburg, October 17, 1787.*

*Alexander Basilowetsch.*

“ This day *Te Deum* has been sung in our presence, on a public thanksgiving for the first victory which has been granted to our arms, since the opening of this campaign, on the first of this month. An account of those acts of zeal, indefatigable activity, and exemplary bravery, by which you have signalized yourself, as well as the troops, under your command, in the defence of Kinburn, was then publicly read.

“ The reports of our Field-Marshal Prince Potemkin Tauritschefski are filled with honourable testimonies on this subject. We experience a sincere pleasure in making known our acknowledgments to you, as well as to the officers and military of every degree, who have co-operated with you in this glorious action.

“ We feel for your wounds ; and we pray God that he will be pleased speedily to heal those which you have received, in defending the religion and frontiers of the empire, and to hasten the cure of all those who are sick. We are, with peculiar good-will, your affectionate,

“ CATHERINE.”

In the course of a few weeks, Suworow received a second letter, with the order of Saint Andrew, which is the first of the empire ; and six crosses of Saint George, to be distributed according to his judgment, to the most distinguished among the officers. Besides this, many of the officers were advanced ; and two hundred soldiers received the silver medal, with some additional gratification.

The garrison of Oczakow was composed of twelve thousand men, janissaries and other infantry ; but it was very weak in cavalry. It now found itself reduced to one half of its original strength ; by the loss of six thousand of its finest troops, who fell before Kinburn : while many of its inhabitants abandoned it, from the apprehension, that the Russians would find the means of making themselves masters of it. The season, however, was now too much advanced to admit of such an enterprize.

On the twentieth of October, the whole of the Turkish fleet returned to Constantinople. But a short time before its departure, a very strong gust of wind had broken the cables of a Russian chaloupe, which, being thus separated from the rest of the fleet, was taken by the Turks.

In a few days after the battle, Suworow erected redoubts of communication, which he furnished with sufficient garrisons, and then dismissed the rest of the troops to winter quarters. As he was conscious of the weak state of Kinburn ; he made such dispositions as to secure it from surprize on the side of Oczakow ; and he gave orders that, as soon as the Liman should be frozen, the ice should be continually broken. The general himself remained at Kinburn.

## CHAP. VIII.

**I**N consequence of the new distribution of the army, Suworow's division, which Prince Potemkin had considerably augmented since the preceding year, was very much strengthened in the spring of 1788, by a considerable fleet, and a great number of row-boats, in the Black Sea. The first, which was commanded by Paul Jones, consisted of five vessels of the line, from sixty-six to eighty guns, and eight frigates. The second, commanded by the prince of Nassau-Siegen, was composed of sixty-five light vessels, gallies, floating-batteries, chaloupes, gun-boats, and eighty Turkish boats mounted with one gun, the whole manned by three thousand Cossacs. The second fleet carried four hundred pieces of cannon.

The Turkish fleet, which was commanded by the famous Haffan Bacha, high admiral appeared before Oczakow at the end of May. It consisted of ten vessels of the line, six frigates, four bomb-ketches, six chebecs, fifteen gun boats, nineteen kirklangitschs, and nine feluccas. He had left another fleet about six miles from land, consisting of eight ships of the line, eight frigates, twenty-one chebecs, and three bomb-ketches.

While the Turkish squadron was approaching the shore, Captain Sacken was behind Kinburn with a double chaloupe. He had been ordered to repair to Gluboka ; but had deferred it by an excess of zeal : when therefore he saw the Turkish

flotilla in the waters of the Liman, he leaped into his vessel, with a determination to pass through them ; but as she was a heavy sailer, he was enveloped by six or eight light vessels of the enemy, two of which attempted to board him. In this situation, he ordered all his people to escape from the vessel as well as they could remaining there alone with the greatest intrepidity ; and that the chaloupe might not fall into the hands of the Turks, he himself set fire to the powder, and was blown up in the sight of a crowd of people who were assembled on the shore at Kinburn. The two Turkish boats, which were near him, received considerable damage from the explosion.

The small flotilla of the Turks ascended the Liman, for the purpose of reconnoitring. About five miles above Kinburn, there were Cossacs of Tschornomor in their canoes, and two battalions of fusileers on the bank. The Turks, though at a considerable distance from land, fired upon the troops, and reached the camp with their heavy cannon. The Cossacs of Tschornomor, who were nearer to them, returned their fire. This cannonade continued during several hours ; and the vessels retired without having brought on a regular engagement. Similar attempts were afterwards occasionally renewed by them.

The whole of the Russia fleet was before Gluboka : the fleet of row-boats, the advanced guard ; and the sailing fleet was in order of battle, with a very strong rear-guard. The fleet at Oczakow was at about the distance of seven miles.

The Prince of Nassau detached his advanced guard. It met that of the Turks, and an engagement ensued. It was the design of the Russians to get, if possible, the Turks behind them, and, in order to effect it, their vessels retreated one after the other. Deceived by this manœuvre, the whole Turkish fleet immediately pursued them, under the very guns of the principal fleet, which did it considerable injury. It then retired in a very damaged state, and pressed very close by the Prince of Nassau, who pursued it in his turn under the cannon of the Turkish fleet.

They lost five vessels, which were sunk, with the greatest part of the crews ; and their loss would have been very considerable, if the Russians had not been opposed by an unfavourable wind. The latter also lost a frigate, but the people on board, and the cannon, were preserved.

Such was the commencement of the naval warfare between the two contending powers on the Black Sea. Similar engagements were continued for several succeeding days ; but without any decisive effect or superiority on either side.

· Suworow now ordered a battery to be erected on the point of the peninsula, in order to command the two currents. It was soon completed ; but as the nature of the ground would not admit of digging deep, a small parapet was formed with heaps of sand. It was furnished with twenty-four pieces of artillery, carrying from eighteen to twenty-four pounders, which were to be masked by sand-banks, till they were wanted for service.

A furnace was also constructed, to heat balls ; and as this battery was placed at the distance of half a mile from the place, it required a proportionable force to defend it : the two battalions of Orlow were therefore detached for its defence, and distributed in the interval.

The object of this disposition was to relieve the troops, as it allowed one half of them to repose, while the other was on duty. Nevertheless, their service was attended with very unpleasant, and even dangerous circumstances : as they remained night and day on the very spot, where the numerous dead had been interred the preceding year, after the affair of the first of October. The sea water, which occasionally filterated through the sand, had, in some degree, checked the course of corruption in the bodies, so that at this distance of time, there exhaled, particularly at sun-rise, a foetid and pestilential vapour, that brought on an epidemical disease, of which several of the soldiers died. There appeared to be no other way of escaping the danger, but by bathing in the sea, and using exercise.

Suworow, who had not considered this dangerous circumstance with proper attention to himself, and had always continued with his troops, was one day on the very moment of fainting from the infected effluvia ; but by instantly bathing in the sea, the threatening symptoms were removed.

In the night of the twenty-seventh of June, the High Admiral, Hassan Bacha, undertook a very rash and daring enterprize.

Between Oczakow and Gluboka, there is a large range of sand banks, which form shoals, that a ship of a moderate size cannot pass over without touching. Nevertheless, he ventured with his large ships, after having passed the currents, under the direction of skilful pilots, to form his fleet in two lines, in the very face of the Russian ships; his principal vessels forming the first line; and his row-boats composing the second.

The Turks looked with contempt on the feeble squadron of the Russians, and fired during the night, as if they had been confident of victory. As soon as it was day, they came down in full sail upon them, and the engagement began.

The Russian fleet was formed with their row-boats in front, and their ships in the rear. And the distant firing of the heavy artillery had not been continued during an hour, when one of the finest Turkish ships, of seventy guns, went a-ground, without a possibility of being saved. In a short time after, the Admiral's ship, of eighty guns, shared the same fate: two frigates of forty guns, with several light vessels, hastened towards them, to haul them off; but the first frigate touched the ground herself, and the others were therefore prevented from making a nearer approach.

The Prince of Nassau ordered a large part of his rowing vessels to attack the ships a-ground; for, as they drew but little water, they could come near enough to board them; his flotilla, however, was received with a brisk discharge of grenades and musketry, and lost many of its people. Neverthe-

les, the Russians persevered in their design with great courage, and, at length, succeeded in getting their vessels on each side the admiral's ship, when the Cossacs of Tschornomor leaped on board it. The red hot balls having set the grounded ships on fire, they were left to their fate.

In this situation every possible exertion was made to save the people, while many of them leaped into the water, and were taken prisoners by the chaloupes. The captains of the three vessels were of that number. There was a considerable quantity of money on board the Turks, and the Russians did not fail to bring away as large a booty as the time would permit. Several smaller vessels went upon the sand-banks, and others were towed off. After a combat of four hours, the victory was decisive.

Haffan Bacha remained, during the whole of the action, on board his barge, and displayed the greatest intrepidity. Some of the Russian row-boats cannonaded him, but without effect. The Prince of Nassau was also seen, fearless of danger, wherever his presence was necessary. He was accompanied by the Count Damas, a colonel in the French service.

Independent of the loss of vessels, taken and burned, the fleet of Haffan Bacha received great injury at the moment of its retreat; which he effected by covering the flotilla with the ships of the line. He returned to its first position; and the Russians anchored about a mile from him.

On his return to his station, the Turkish High Admiral expressed the utmost affliction at his disaster ; refused his food, and preserved a melancholy silence. This misfortune, indeed, threatened his life, and he might be alarmed, least he should soon be called to bend his neck to the sabre.

The loss of this battle cost the Turks upwards of two thousand men, who were killed, and fifteen hundred, who were made prisoners : the latter were removed to Kinburn. One of the three Turkish captains, having had a leg carried away in the action, died in the arms of his two sons, who had been made prisoners with him.

On the side of the Russians, the loss was not very considerable. Two hundred were killed, among whom were eighteen superior officers, and six hundred wounded, including forty officers of equal rank. Lieutenant-Colonel Ribas, brother of the vice-admiral, lost an arm ; but the pain of such an accident was not sufficient, in the heat of the action, to prevent him from employing that which remained, in applying the match to a cannon.

After this defeat, Hassan Bacha endeavoured to form a junction with the Turkish fleet, which was at sea ; and, on the 30th of June, about midnight, he weighed anchor for that purpose.

The night was dark, and when he was off the point of Kinburn, which he was obliged to double, the batteries suddenly opened upon him, with a terrible fire, and did considerable damage to his advanced guard. The firing was so violent, that

the Turks, who were ignorant of these masqued batteries, thought themselves under the town of Kinburn. When the moon rose, the fire of the batteries was continued with an encreased effect.

Before day-break, several of the Turkish vessels were forced to lay by, and some of them had made signals of distress ; others were on fire, and several had foundered. The crews endeavoured to save themselves by swimming ; but many of them were drowned ; while others, in a state of despair, loaded themselves with cannon-ball, that they might sink at once to the bottom.

At the beginning of the cannonade, Suworow had dispatched an order to Prince Nassau, to attack the Turks with his squadron. He was about a mile from Oczakow, and had Paul Jones behind him. This attack could not take place before day-break ; but a very smart engagement then took place. The Turkish ships, instead of forming a line, were in a state of confusion, and much too near each other. Paul Jones, also, was fearful of exposing his large ships to the dangers of the sand-banks : and his precaution was justified by the fate of the Wolodimir, who, for want of it, had the misfortune to run upon them.

The small Russian vessels, and particularly their gun boats and gallies, ran under the large Turkish ships, whose great guns could do them no mischief, when they were once grappled ; and contrived, by ladders, to get on board, and set them on fire.

Haffan Bacha, however, with his vanguard, had so far availed himself of the night, as to have escaped: and it was not till the evening, that he was informed of his additional misfortune. This terrible combat lasted till near noon, when the ships, which were on fire, blew up; and at one, the action had entirely ceased.

The loss of the Russian fleet, on this occasion amounted to one hundred and thirty killed, including twenty-four officers; and about eight hundred wounded. The Turks had three thousand killed and wounded, and two thousand were taken prisoners.

The Russians, also, took a ship of the line, and two frigates; so that with those which were blown up, went to the bottom, and rendered useless: the fleet of Oczakow was, in a great measure, destroyed.

The empress did not suffer her victorious sailors to remain without a recompense of their valour. Marks of favour were distributed to all ranks throughout the fleet. The Prince Nassau, among other testimonies of the Imperial favour, received the flag of a vice-admiral.

Prince Potemkin had appointed the latter end of June for assembling the army of Sockoli, about forty miles from Oczakow, which he prepared to besiege. Accordingly, in the beginning of August, he passed the river with it, and began his approaches.

Suworow embarked at Kinburn, with his regiment of grenadiers of Fanagor, and joined the army, where he took the command of the left wing. He had, some time before, received orders to make himself master of the island of Perefian, in the Black Sea, with the fleet commanded by Ribas ; but that expedition did not take place.

The siege of Oczakow began, in due form, the 29th of August. Among frequent sallies of less importance, the Turks made one the 28th, with several thousand men, and attacked the extremity of the Russian left wing, where the infantry of the Independant Cossacs, and of the Cossacs of the Bog, were posted. The Russians were closely pressed, and gave way, when Suworow hastened to their assistance, with a battalion of grenadiers, attacked the Turks with bayonet fixed, and repulsed them. In the heat of the action, however, they continued the pursuit to the very intrenchments of the place, where the Turks received a reinforcement of three thousand men. In short, by mutual reinforcements, the action became general ; and it was with great difficulty that the enemy prevented their entrenchments from being taken.

Suworow was exposed to a very brisk fire of musquetry, which was the more dangerous, as he was the particular object of it. A young Turk who had been converted to the Greek religion ; and for some time served a Russian officer, had deserted the preceding evening, and now pointed out Suworow for the Turks to aim at. The general accordingly received a ball in the nape of the neck ; and the wound became so very painful, that he

thought proper to return to the camp ; having sent a messenger before to prepare a surgeon and a priest. In quitting the field, he had given up the command to Lieutenant-General Bilbikow, whom he ordered to withdraw the battalions, as he did not augur favorably of the issue of the action, if it were any longer continued.

In the mean time, Suworow arrived at his tent where the surgeon examined his wound extracted the ball, and applied the first dressing. His horse had received several shots in his body, and died, as a soldier was taking off his saddle.

The battalions were left by Suworow, as he well knew, in a very dangerous position ; and the event was precisely as he had foreseen. Instead of retiring by degrees, the retreat was beat at once, which caused the troops to fly in haste and disorder ; by which untoward conduct, the Russians lost several hundred men.

Suworow's wound became more painful. He had several fainting fits, and a fever followed on the third day. He, therefore, ordered himself to be removed to Kinburn : on the day after his arrival at which place, his respiration was become very difficult, and his end seemed to be approaching. Nature, however, prevailed ; a long and tranquil sleep, which fortunately succeeded, restored his strength, and he was soon declared to be out of danger. His wound was also threatened with a gangreen, but that was removed, and though he was under the surgeon's care, and often under his knife, during three weeks, he never kept his bed. He

was also, for some days, attacked by the jaundice : nevertheless, he persevered in his long accustomed practice, of preferring regimen to medicine, and his health was soon re-established. Though before he was quite recovered, he again very narrowly escaped destruction, from the consequences of fire in the powder-magazine, which was full of charged bombs, grenades, and various other combustibles, prepared for the army before Oczakow. One of the bombs fell in the chamber, where the general was sitting, tore his bed, and broke down a part of the wall, and wounded him in the face, the breast, and the knee. Some lost their lives, and many were wounded by this misfortune ; but as all those who were employed in the magazine, at the time it blew up, lost their lives, the cause of the disaster could not be discovered.

The inhabitants of Oczakow, on seeing the enormous smoke in which Kirburn was for some time enveloped, concluded, that the whole of the town had been blown up ; the serafquier, therefore sent an immediate express to the fleet, with orders to make a descent at Kinburn, with a view to take advantage of the confusion, which such a terrible accident might be supposed to have occasioned. But Hassan Bacha refused to obey them. And he did right : for, on a suspicion that such an attempt might be made, the troops were all prepared, and disposed to resist it.

Hassan Bacha was soon after recalled to Constantinople, where, it was supposed, he would lose his head. But it did not appear that he underwent any kind of punishment. The remains of the

Turkish fleet continued at sea, under the command of the vice-admiral, till the end of October, when it set sail for the Dardanelles.

In the mean time, the siege of Oczakow continued ; the hard frosts set in, and the besieged lost great numbers of men. At length, after four months regular attack, Prince Potemkin ordered an assault, on the sixth of December, and the Russians became masters of the place.

Of eighty thousand troops, which formed the besieging army of Oczakow, four thousand three hundred lost their lives at the assault, while epidemic fevers, and the rigour of the season, had carried off a much larger number. The Turks sustained a loss of four thousand seven hundred killed, and four thousand eight hundred were made prisoners of war.

During the latter operations of the siege, Suworow remained at Cherson and Kremenschuck, for the recovery of his health.

In the beginning of the following year, he returned to Petersburg ; when the empress presented him with a plume of diamonds for his casque, distinguished by a cypher of the letter K, as an acknowledgment for his defence of Kinburn. In a short time after, he returned to the army.

## CHAP. IX.

**S**UWOROW, immediately after his arrival at Jassy, paid a visit to Field-Marshal-General Count Romanzow, who soon after contracted a perpetual lameness in his feet, and was then lodged at a country seat near Jassy. He therefore left his army under the command of Prince Potemkin, and, when united with that which the latter had under his orders, they acquired the name of the combined army.

Suworow soon after arrived at Berlat, eighteen miles from Jassy, where he took the command of the corps there, which was commanded by Lieutenant-General Derfelden. That general had, some time before, defeated a body of twenty thousand Turks, of whom four thousand were left on the field of battle, with thirty-seven standards, and fourteen pieces of cannon taken.

The corps at Berlat consisted of three regiments of Staradub, Nesan, and Tschernikow carabineers, forming five squadrons; with the regiments of Cossacs, under the two colonels Grekow; one thousand Arnauts, with twelve battalions of infantry, two of which were grenadiers; two regiments of Chasseurs; two of Smolinski infantry; two of Tuli; two of Nostow; and two of Ascherow; together with the flying artillery, and sixteen large field-pieces. These troops were commanded by Lieutenant-General Derfelden, Major-General Boniakow, the Prince of Ezakawski, and Brigadiers Lewaschok, Wetsphal, and Burnaschow.

They were upon the point of marching for Was-luis, half way towards Jassy ; but Suworow prevented their departure, went to reconnoitre the envirous, and advanced four miles farther, to Karaptschesti, where the cordon of light troops were placed at the advanced post. These he stationed a little higher, that he might be near enough to discover the best points of operation beyond the Sereth, as far as Aropestia and Forhani.

During these transactions, the Prince of Saxe-Cobourg had quitted his winter quarters, in Gallicia, and had advanced into Walachia, with his army, to the right bank of the Sereth. He was encamped before the small town of Atschud, on the banks of the Stratuch, which falls into the Sereth, and his army was pretty much in a line with the corps of General Suworow, who informed the Prince of his arrival, and received the most friendly answer from him. Although hitherto unacquainted, they now formed a friendship and intimacy, which is highly requisite between the generals of two allied powers. Never did the least distrust disturb the harmony of their operations, nor had they any secrets from each other. The Russian and Austrian officers visited in the two camps with equal satisfaction ; and, in a word, both the leaders, and their subordinate officers, lived in that perfect friendship which eventually contributed so much to the success of their arms.

After the death of Abtul-Amit, which happened on the seventh of April, the throne was filled by Selim, who augmented his military establishment with one hundred and fifty thousand men,

one third of which were intended to serve in Walachia. The Turks, who had been posted before Brahiliow, on the Danube, marched under a Seraskier to Zorhani, twelve miles from Prince Cobourg's camp, and soon found themselves forty thousand strong.

They were now on the point of attacking his corps, which was much inferior to them, in point of numbers ; and of this he immediately informed Suworow, who instantly began to march. He left the regiment of Truli before Bulat, with four field pieces, besides his own, two squadrons of each regiment of carabineers, one hundred Cossacs, and one half of the Arnauts.

The corps directed its march to Atschud, by a short but very difficult road, across the woods. They marched day and night, passed the Sereth on the Austrian pontoons, and advanced eighty wersts, (twenty-four French leagues, or twelve German miles,) in the space of thirty-six hours, including those unavoidably devoted to rest. We have scarcely an example of so rapid a march.

It was at this time that General Suworow ran a pin into the sole of his foot ; and as the head of it broke, it could not be immediately extracted, so that he limped for some time. The Turks, who often saw him at a small distance, imagining this defect habitual, nick-named him *Topal Bacha*, (or, the limping general.)

The Prince of Cobourg, who had been apprised of the departure of the columns, would not credit this astonishing march, till he had seen General Suworow with his own eyes. The troops arrived at dusk, and were posted on the left wing of the Austrians.

The next day, two bridges were thrown over the

Stratusch, and the two corps passed in two columns, the Austrians to the right, and Russians to the left.

To conceal the junction of the Russians with Prince Cobourg's corps from the enemy, Suworow had none but Austrians in his vanguard, which was composed of two Kaunitz and Colloredo battalions of Barko hussars, and Loewener light horse, under the orders of the brave Colonel Karatschay. When the Russian troops halted, it was always in a hollow behind the van-guard. They rested two nights during their march, and Suworow, who was almost always before them in order to reconnoitre, fell on a party of Turks who did not know him.

On the third day, while the troops were resting under cover of Maria Tschestia, two miles [from the river Putna, Suworow sent an officer upon the scout with thirty Cossacs. He met a body of two hundred Turks ; and, as he had orders in such case to draw them on, he made his Cossacs retire little by little in a state of dispersion. His measures were already taken, and the regiment of Cossacs of Iwan Grekow led by the major of the day. Kuris made the first attack. The regiment was in three divisions. The first attacked the Turks when they approached the wood, wheeled suddenly round, and, being afterwards succoured by above five hundred men, returned to the charge ; upon which the two other divisions of Cossacs took part in the action. The number of the Turks soon amounted to two thousand men. The other regiments of Cossacs were also engaged, as were the Arnauts, commanded by captain Falkenhagen. The Turks again gave way, but the whole of their van-guard consisting of four thousand Spahi's coming up, the Russians were obliged to retreat. The five squa-

drons of Barko hussars then came to their support ; the battle was renewed ; and, although the enemy began to lose the advantages they had gained, the success of the Russians was still doubtful, till they were re-enforced by three squadrons of Loewener light horse and two squadrons of carabineers, together with a few hundred chasseurs and infantry. The Turks now took to flight ; and all the cavalry that had been engaged pursued them as far as the Putna, where a great number of them drowned.

In this battle, which continued five hours, the Turks lost six hundred men ; among whom were a great many officers, but scarcely any were made prisoners. They were commanded by Osman, a bacha of two tails, and one of their best generals. The loss of the Russians was inconsiderable.

Two thousand men of Turkish infantry were seen several times putting themselves in motion, on the other side of the Putna, with two pieces of cannon : but they did not come to the relief of their cavalry, and retired precipitately to Forhani.

The night already began to grow dark, and the two combined corps had taken their positions, when the Turks suddenly fell upon them, and a party of light troops, who had taken and plundered their camp beyond Putna, advanced as far as that river. Karatschay who in the interval occupied the heights near a ford, with the battalion of Kaunitz, received the enemy with a fire of musketry, and repulsed them.

The Russians had already begun to throw pontoons over the river, and the pioneers who were disturbed for a short time by this incident, soon resumed their work. The Kaunitz and Colloredo battalions covered the tête-de-pont, and two batta-

lions of Russian chasseurs were encamped on the hither side of the river. At midnight, the stream carried away the bridge, but it was soon repaired, and the Russian troops arrived on the opposite bank before day-break, together with the rest of their van-guard. The infantry passed over the bridge, and the cavalry forded the river upon their right. At day-break, Prince Cobourg's corps passed in the same manner ; and the two corps marched in columns ascending some gently rising grounds, and when they were at the summit, from which they could discover a large extent of country, they drew up in order of battle. The Austrians formed in platoons in two lines, placed alternately like a chequer on the right, with a third line entirely composed of cavalry. According to this arrangement, the Russians was on the left wing in six platoons, of which the third was formed by the cavalry, together with the Cossacs. Karatschay kept in the middle of the two corps with the battalions and squadrons, which had before served as a van guard to the Russians.

The front of the line was half a mile in extent, and at six in the morning the two corps marched against the enemy with drums beating. The skirmishes began, and the army had thus advanced nearly half a mile, when fifteen thousand Turkish horse fell upon the right wing of Prince Cobourg, apparently intending to surround it. But Field-Marshal Spleni, who had somewhat slackened his march, and who was two hundred paces in the rear with three platoons, placed the enemy between two fires of musquetry, and, in half an hour, repulsed them with considerable loss.

During these manœuvres, the Russian corps was gaining ground. The Turks defended themselves

with twenty thousand horse, attacked the left wing, which was commanded by Lieutenant-General Derfelden, and broke through the platoons, especially on the left flank. The engagement continued about two hours, till at length the enemy being overthrown with great loss, took to flight across a wood.

The two corps had in front a very thick wood, which they were obliged to turn, and posted themselves on the other side in the same order in which they were before. This was nearly half way from the Putna to Forhani. For the space of half a mile the ground was covered with brambles, so that both men and horses had their legs much scratched and stained with blood. The Turks sometimes annoyed them, though feebly, and the skirmishers were not very active, till they had quitted this rough ground, and got into an open country. The enemy then frequently renewed their attacks, but were almost always repulsed by the cavalry, who marched behind the lines. Once, when the Turks were at a distance of a quarter of a mile from their camp at Forhani, they wholly abandoned the field, and immediately began to play their artillery. As they did not much annoy the two corps, the latter advanced rapidly some hundred paces to be out of the range of their guns, and all the balls flew over their heads.

The Turkish infantry was in the centre of their entrenchments, and the cavalry on their wings; and it was remarked that their troops did not present a good countenance. When the Russians were at the distance of a werst from their camp, the two corps opened a strong fire of artillery as they marched, and when they arrived within three hundred paces, the platoons attacked the intrenchments in full charge, with their bayonets and

cries of war. As the intrenchments were ill raised and not strengthened with sufficient artillery, they were soon carried. Only the first line of platoons penetrated into them, under the command of Schastakow, Narock, and Bohm. On the left, the Austrian platoons, commanded by Spleni, did the same. All the works were carried, and the Turks were obliged to fly. Their cavalry were soon overthrown on the two flanks. The imperial and bako hussars distinguished themselves on this occasion.

In the rear, and at a small distance from the intrenchments, the Turks had fortified the convent of St. Samuel, where they had a considerable magazine of provisions. A few hundred janissaries had thrown themselves into it to cover their fugitives. This post, two Russian and two Austrian platoons attacked with a great quantity of artillery. The battle continued several hours; two Austrian majors, Counts Auersberg and Orelly, and several officers were killed, with about one hundred men; and there were a great number wounded. A powder-magazine also blew up, and killed a great many in the interior of the convent. At length the gate was forced by means of the artillery, and almost all the Turks who had fled there were cut to pieces. Those who took refuge in the church experienced the same fate; and, after an obstinate engagement, all those who defended the convent, were cut in pieces.

Prince Cobourg, Karatschay and Suworow, met together at the end of this last battle, and embraced each other, and a great many officers of both corps, congratulating one another on the victory they had gained. Prince Cobourg caused a cloak to be extended on the ground before the convent, and made a military halt at four o'clock, P.M.

Not far from this convent was that of St. John, in which also was a great magazine of provisions. The Turks had likewise thrown two or three hundred men into this edifice. Prince Cobourg sent thither one of his battalions, who attacked and took it after an engagement of an hour. One third of the enemy were made prisoners, and the rest were put to the sword.

The Turks fled by two different roads, namely, by that of Bukarest to the small town of Rymnik, whither they were pursued by a body of Cossacs and Arnauts, who took from them above four hundred waggons ; and by the road of Brahilow, whither the imperial and barko hussars pursued them, together with the Hulans and Arnauts, and took an equal quantity of baggage.

Thus terminated the battle of Forhani, which took place on the 21st July, 1789. The action commenced at six o'clock, and finished at ten. There were forty thousand of the Turks against eighteen thousand Austrians and seven thousand Russians. The enemy left two thousand men on the field, and about three hundred were made prisoners. They lost sixteen standards, twelve pieces of cannon, and their camp, which was very rich, and immense magazines. The loss of the Russians and Austrians was comparatively nothing.

As the most perfect harmony prevailed between the generals, it was agreed that the booty of the camp and the cannon should be equally divided, and that the standards should remain the property of those who had taken them. As to the magazines of provisions, the general left them entirely to the Prince of Cobourg, because the Russians were to march in another direction.

This was the first battle gained by the Austrians during this war. The method of forming the troops into platoons, or small squares, was now adopted; and from that time, Prince Hohenloke, Laudon, and Clairfait, beat the enemy, by pursuing that method.

The Prince of Cobourg received the grand cross of Maria Theresa; and the Emperor Joseph wrote to Suworow, with a snuff-box adorned with his cypher set in diamonds, in the following terms:

“ I have received, general in chief, with extreme pleasure, your letter, announcing to me the glorious victory gained at Forhani, by the troops of her Imperial Majesty, under your command, combined with mine, under the Prince of Cobourg. It would be impossible for him sufficiently to pride himself on the assistance he has received from your genius and valour, as well as from the whole corps you command, for which I am under a particular obligation to you. I also request you, to testify my particular gratitude to General Field-Marshal Prince Potemkin Tauritschewski, whose zeal has greatly contributed to the success of our arms. I hope I shall often have additional opportunities of demonstrating to her Imperial Majesty, the fidelity of my attachment to her. Be assured, general in chief, of my perfect esteem, to which you have acquired a just title, by the heroic actions which have already distinguished your career.

“ *Luxembourg, August 13, 1789.*

(Signed) JOSEPH.”

HISTORY  
OF THE  
CAMPAIGNS  
OF  
*Prince Alexander Suworow  
Rymnikski,*

FIELD-MARSHAL-GENERAL IN THE SERVICE OF  
HIS IMPERIAL MAJESTY, THE EMPEROR  
OF ALL THE RUSSIANS,

WITH  
A PRELIMINARY SKETCH OF HIS PRIVATE  
LIFE AND CHARACTER.

→→→@←←←  
*Translated from the German of Frederic Anthing.*  
→→→@←←←

TO WHICH IS ADDED,  
A CONCISE AND COMPREHENSIVE HISTORY  
OF HIS  
*ITALIAN CAMPAIGN.*

---

---

VOL. II.

---

---

NEW-YORK:

PRINTED BY C. AND R. WAITE, FOR WM. COBBETT,  
1800.



# CAMPAIGNS

OR

*PRINCE ALEXANDER SUWOROW,  
RYMNIKSKI.*

## C H A P. X.

GENERAL Suworow received advice of the manœuvres of the Turks, during his absence at Berlat. Their intention was to pass the river of Pruth, and to attack that district. He, therefore, began to march the day after the battle of Forhani; but although the road by that place was the most direct, he must have lost some time in throwing bridges over the river, and therefore he preferred the waste of Atschud. No obstacles occurred on the Putna; but not far from the small town of Atschud, the strength of the current of the Stratusch carried away the pontoons, and the infantry were obliged to pass the river on planks.

Four battalions were left behind, with the artillery, in order to effect a passage, when the waters should have subsided. The cavalry passed in flat-bottomed boats; while the Cossacks and Arnauts swam across the river. Within a few days, (on the 27th of July,) Suworow arrived at Berlat; and, on the thirtieth, the troops which he had left on the other bank, followed him with their field-pieces.

Nevertheless to guard against the incursions of the Tartars of Bessarabia, who occupy the country between the Pruth and the Sereth, and to prevent any diversions that might induce the garrison of Brahilow to repair to the mouth of the Sereth, on the side of Berlat, Prince Repnin detached from his corps, encamped at Repajamohila, Lieutenant-General Prince Wolgonski, with four battalions, and eight squadrons, with orders to take a position in the village of Saporeni, between Falschi and Berlat, for the purpose of observing the motions of the enemy, and to cover the left flank of Suworow's army.

In a short time after his arrival at Berlat, the general ordered Baron de Sacken to occupy Falschi on the Pruth, with a battalion, and some pieces of artillery. He also established a chain of communication with him, by detachments of light troops: while Sacken, at the head of fifty Cossacks, extended his reconnoitering excursions to the environs of Kagul and Ismailow.

The Tartars, after having forded the Pruth near Ismailow, surprised, during the night, a Russian officer with a party of Arnauts, in the village of Faltchafti, about fifteen miles from Falchi. He made a very vigorous defence, but was, at length, made prisoner. The Tartars brought with them a considerable number of peasants from Moldavia, whom, according to their usual practice, they sold to the Turks.

Major Sabolewski, who commanded the advanced posts at Karaptsefski, gave notice, that a swarm of Turks had passed the Danube near Galaz. At the same time, two Tartars, who were made prifon-

ers by the Arnauts, on the other side of the Pruth, declared, that Hassan, who was lately captain-bacha, but since become seraskier, had it in contemplation to leave, very shortly, the environs of Ismailow, with a considerable body of forces, in order to fall upon the troops commanded by Prince Repnin, posted at Rapajamohila, and afterwards to attack the Prince of Cobourg before Forhani.

A confidential person, who had been sent into Walachi, gave intelligence, that the Turkish army, commanded by the Vizier, had passed the Danube at Kirfow, and that their march was directed along the Busco, between Forhani and Brahilow, with the design to fight Prince Cobourg, and then to penetrate to Jassey, which was not sufficiently strong to make a formidable resistance.

The Prince Cobourg set out to meet Hasson Bacha, and fell in with him the nineteenth of September, near Salza, at the distance of ten miles from Ismailow. Suworow proceeded to Karaptcheski; and general Derfelden marched along the Pruth, with a flying corps, to turn the Turks, if they presented themselves.

An officer having been dispatched, with fifty Cossacks, to Galaz, on a party of discovery, brought an account, that about five hundred Spahis were scouring the countries in detached parties. As it would be a loss of time to look after them, Suworow advanced four miles, to Puzzeni, in order to approach the Austrians. Derfelden also formed his junction at that place, as, from the intelligence that had been procured, there was every reason to expect a very important action.

Suworow had left behind him, at Berlat, two

battalions, with six field-pieces, six squadrons of carabineers, and the heavy baggage. Sacken remained at Faltschi, with his battalion, a hundred and fifty Cossacks, and two hundred Arnauts, to attend to that country.

On the sixth of September, the general received an express from Prince Cobourg, with the intelligence, that the Turks were on their march against him. His position was on the river Milkow, about a mile from Forhani, and had posted his advanced guard, half a mile before him, under the command of Karatschay. The following day, another messenger arrived, to inform the general, that the Turks were in full march to attack Prince Cobourg, with a very numerous army, led on by the Grand Vizier. The Prince requested that the general would join him with all speed; and added, that one of his parties had already suffered from an attack of the enemy, and that he had found it necessary to call in his advanced guard.

Suworow set out with his corps at midnight, passed the Berlat, by a bridge, at noon, which was three miles from the place of his departure, and took the direct road to the Sereth, where he expected to find the pontoons of the Austrians; but they were two miles higher up at Mariteschestie, whither the troops were obliged to proceed through roads that were almost impassable. There had fallen a great quantity of rain during the night; and though the light cavalry had passed the bridge, when Suworow had reached the banks of the river, at the head of the carabineers, it appeared that the storm had given such a shock to the pontoons, as to create an apprehension, that they were in great danger of

being carried away. The passage therefore, was too hazardous to be attempted, and the carabineers were forced to fall back upon the infantry, who were up to their knees in mud. It was a deep clayey soil, from which both men and horses found it very difficult to extricate themselves. At length they found a spot, in an adjoining wood, that was sufficiently dry to bear them.

Major Kuris was immediately charged with the reparation of the pontoons. He set a thousand peasants, and fifteen hundred soldiers at work, and the business was completed in the course of the night ; so that, at break of day, the troops passed, in files, over the pontoons. As the weather, which had been very cloudy, began to clear up, they marched gaily on three miles farther, to the other side of the Putna, where they were allowed a few hours to repose.

The light cavalry, which had been sent forward, was followed by Burnascow, with his carabineers. He presented himself in the morning to Prince Cobourg, who expressed a high degree of satisfaction at the rapidity of the march.

General Suworow arrived some hours later, with the infantry ; and Prince Cobourg received him with every mark of the warmest friendship. They repeated their embraces, and all the generals, officers, and soldiers, from a spontaneous emotion, followed their example. The warriors of the two allied nations, received each other, as familiar acquaintances, and old friends.

The Turkish army had arrived, by two marches, to the river of Rymnik, at four miles distance from the Milkow, where Prince Cobourg was encamped,

The Russian Cavalry was distributed in three divisions, in the woods on the other side of the river, while the infantry encamped to the left of the Austrians.

After a short conference with the Prince Cobourg, the general re-mounted his horse, with some officers and Cossacks, and set out on a reconnoitering party. The country fell in a gentle declivity to a considerable distance; and he climbed up a tree, in order to obtain a better view of it; when he conceived the measures necessary to be taken from his view of the ground.

He discovered several roads, which led to the Turkish camp; but the most direct did not seem to him to be the best, because it was frequented by patrols: there were however two others to the left, one of which was half a mile about. Having made these observations, he set out, on his return; but, in his way, met two squadrons of Austrian hussars, who were dispatched after him, by way of precaution, and to serve as a safeguard.

He had another conference with the Prince Cobourg, when he proposed an immediate attack on the Turks; and his proposition was followed by an unhesitating acquiescence. He had not taken any rest since his departure from Puzzeni; but, in the circumstances that surrounded him, his mind was too much occupied, to permit him to indulge in the slightest repose. He, however, returned to his post, and left his orderly officer, Colonel Zalotuchin, to concert with the Prince every arrangement of the final dispositions, previous to the intended attack.

Suworow's corps was now strengthened by two

squadrons of the hussars of the emperor, and of Barco, commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Grave. As the march might be made unobserved, for at least half a mile, from the particular disposition of the ground, the two corps began to move in the evening. Suworow, who was charged with the attack of the left wing of the Turkish camp, took the second road to the right ; and Prince Cobourg pursued the third to the left.

At the close of day, the whole army had begun its march. The infantry passed the river upon the Austrian pontoons, while the cavalry and artillery took the advantage of a ford. The night was very dark ; and General Posniakow, misled by his guide, had conducted the infantry into the road taken by the Austrians ; but the mistake was discovered in time, and order quickly restored.

In every other respect, the darkness of the night was highly favourable to the secrecy so necessary to the success of the march ; and the absence of the moon was a subject of congratulation.

The troops advanced with all practicable silence, and the words of command were given in the lowest tone. Some hours before it was day, and after having advanced two miles, they arrived on the banks of the Rymna, which, in that place, is not more than fifty paces broad. Prince Cobourg merits the highest praise for the judicious and universal precautions which he had taken. He had commanded pontoons to be brought, but as the river was not of an inconvenient depth, no use was made of them, in order to prevent the noise which they might occasion. The water did not reach the

soldiers knees; but as the opposite bank of the river was steep, it became necessary to employ the large horses, belonging to the pontoons, to draw up the artillery. This circumstance, for a short time, retarded the passage, but it, at length, terminated in the best possible order.

The infantry formed the head of the column, and the first line having passed with sufficient artillery, the rest were secure. A party of cavalry kept upon its wings; when the second line of infantry passed in the same order, accompanied by the cavalry.

At break of day the Russians were on the other side of the river, and had put themselves in order of battle. Their corps which consisted of seven thousand men, was distributed in three lines. The infantry occupied the first and second, in six platoons, and the cavalry formed the third. The Austrians, also, marched in three lines; the two first forming nine platoons: and the third was composed of the cavalry, amounting in the whole to about eighteen thousand men; so that the two corps possessed nearly the same strength and numbers, as at the battle of Forhani.

At sun-rise, the several lines advanced across the fields, covered with Turkey corn and other plants, which reached the soldiers girdles. The army was not at this time more than a mile and a half from the Turkish camp; nor had it seen one of the enemy's patroles; so that it proceeded without discovery. A Turkish spy had given intelligence that the Russians were posted at Putzeni; and from the time and distance, it could not, indeed, have been supposed that they could possibly have advanced so far:

the poor spy, for this intelligence, which was believed to be false, afterwards lost his head.

Nevertheless, a lieutenant, whom the general had sent, during the march to Marietcheltie, to secure the Austrian pontoons, having executed his commission, took the direct road to Rymnik, and unexpectedly fell in with some Turks; who, after a vigorous resistance, wounded and made him prisoner, with an inferior officer and some Cossacs. They questioned him, respecting the march of the Russians, but not giving credit to his account, he was sent immediately to the Grand Vizier. Being present at the moment when the battle began, he exaggerated the force of the Russians; and having informed the Vizier, that Suworow commanded them, he replied, that it must be some other person of that name, as the general himself had died of his wounds at Kinburn.

The Russian corps now approached the Turkish camp. The ground rose with a very gentle ascent, and at the summit, there were several large ditches, covered with artillery, which began to play as soon as the Turks perceived their enemy within a quarter of a mile of them. The Russians, however, were not prevented from charging; though the Ravines presented obstacles to them, and their artillery, which it was very difficult to overcome. In the mean time, the cavalry of the right wing were led on to the attack, by Brigadier Burnaschow.

The Turks were on a hill; and, seizing advantage of a hollow way, they took the Russian cavalry in flank, turned it with superior force, and attacked a body of grenadiers of Chastatow, which was on the right wing.

They consisted of six or seven thousand men; and the Janissaries, having mounted behind the Spahis, leaped down, and fought by the side of their horses, during an hour, under a running fire of musketry.

At length, however, they were repulsed with considerable loss; and the Janissaries having re-mounted the horses, took to flight. Burnaschow followed them to a considerable distance, with great slaughter.

The camp of the Turks, which was near the town of Tyrgoukuli, was soon broke up. It was situated on a steep hill, and the troops which occupied it, consisted of twelve thousand men; but they made their retreat with so much expedition, that the Russians could not get possession, even of their artillery.

At the beginning of the action of Tyrkogukuli, Osman Bacha, who had conducted himself with much distinguished courage, at the affair of Putna, demanded five thousand volunteer Spahis of the Vizier; which being granted, he fell, with great impetuosity, on the Russian left wing. The contest was very sharp for some time, but at length, after having lost a great number of his people, he was obliged to fly.

All the platoons proceeded towards Bochsa and Kringumaelor; but that of Chaftatow, which retained its position, in order to support the cavalry who were left behind, and were in some danger of being cut off. As soon as the junction was formed, it proceeded and overtook the rest of the infantry, at the distance of half a mile, where they had halted; but Chaftatow's troops were deprived of that advan-

tage, as the others were just beginning to move forward when they arrived, so that they were obliged to continue their march, without having enjoyed the least repose.

In the mean time the Turks had discovered the weakness of the Russian corps. Osman Bacha had ordered fifteen thousand horse to follow him in order to surround this little corps before it could reach the height of Bochfa. Prince Cobourg, who had taken a longer rout, and come down the Rymna nearly a mile, had approached about half a mile nearer the Russians, during the battle of Tyrkogukuli. This body of Turks of fifteen thousand men, fell unawares under his cannon, and were obliged to sustain an engagement of two hours. Karetchay, who was to the right of the Austrians, was pressed close; his cavalry charged the Turks repeatedly; the fire of the carbines and musketry annoyed them much, and they were obliged to retreat.

Towards noon, they were tranquil on all sides; not a single Turk now appeared, and Soworow assembled his platoons and the cavalry under a mountain, near the village of Kaiata, a mile from Tyrkogukuli, where the troops, which were exhausted with fatigue, rested an hour on the banks of a rivulet. On the summit of this mountain are still seen the ruins of a considerable fort, of which it is said in that country, that whoever takes possession of it, is sure to gain the battle, and whoever keeps it is master of Wallachia. The true origin of this opinion is, that this mountain is in the centre of the plains of Forhani, which extend from the Putna, to the banks of Buseo, as far as Brahilow, and which have been

the scene of several bloody engagements; and it is well known, that Bajazet defeated the Hospodar Stephen, with sixty thousand men, near Rymnik.

When the Russian corps marched to Tyrkogukuli, their lines were directed towards the south; and, as they made a movement on their left, they removed to the westward. They had before them, at the distance of half a mile, the village of Bochfa. Prince Cobourg was at the same distance, but in a more oblique direction, and the Grand Vizier was at above a mile distance from that village, with the bulk of his army, beyond the wood of Kringumaelor, on the river Rymnik. The Turks had opened entrenchments on the skirts of a wood, where they intended to leave their heavy baggage, and to attack Prince Cobourg the next day; but the latter anticipated them before they were quite ready; and, during the battle, they were still at work on several points. They had begun to establish a line of communication from the wood to the village of Bochfa, and they had equally intrenched Boscha and Kaiata, as well as erected batteries to clear the field of battle by a cross fire from Tyrkogukuli to Kringumaelor. These batteries, which were already finished, were of no use, in consequence of a movement of Suworow, who had turned them.

The Russians renewed the battle at one o'clock in the afternoon, when they all began to march to the village of Bochfa. The Arnauts pushed forward and were the first, who charged a party of Turks. The Grand Vizier shewed himself in person, at the head of a numerous cavalry; and, with a force of forty thousand men, including the twenty thousand who had been fighting in the morning,

fell on Prince Cobourg's corps on all sides. They particularly pressed the right wing, which separated Karatschay from the main body; and their cavalry threw themselves bravely under the fire of the carbines, and of the musketry, and even on the very bayonets. Thus the Austrians were in imminent danger, and repulsed six following attacks with the greatest intrepidity. The Hungarian hussars conducted themselves with distinguished bravery, succeeding in breaking the enemy's lines, notwithstanding the superiority of their numbers, made the Turks give way, and killed an immense number of men. Prince Cobourg sent repeatedly, during the action, to request Suworow to come and support him.

As to Suworow, he was behind Bochsa. He had turned the enemy's batteries, who had scarcely time to fire a few rounds, before they took flight, and precipitately dragged all the cannon they could save, behind the intrenchments of Kringumaelor. At this time the Spahis arrived; and in order to stop the platoons, by hemming them in, they made several attacks, few of which were made with vigour. They charged the Russian light horse, but the regular troops received and repulsed them. In the last pursuit in particular, the carabineers of Tschernikow, and the hussars of the emperor cut several hundred men in pieces.

Suworow found, on the other side of the village, a situation of sufficient extent to form his lines, instantly, in order of battle. The Turks kept up a very vigorous fire from their heavy artillery, placed in the wood of Kringumaelor, by which the platoons were at first annoyed; but as they conti-

nued to advance, the greater part of this cannonade was without effect.

The Russians marched boldly up to the wood, and as their left wing was but a quarter of a mile from the right wing of Prince Cobourg, as well as from the wood, Suworow resolved to make a last and decisive attack to terminate this contest, which began to grow long and tedious. The lines of the Russians, and those of the **Austrians**, formed a right angle with the interval just described, the Russians facing the west, and the **Austrians** the south ; a position which was very disadvantageous to the **Turks** : and Suworow sent the Colonel Zalotuchin to Prince Cobourg, to desire him immediately to advance, as soon as he should see him commence the attack.

Prince Cobourg had already been engaged in the preceding battle, wherein the **Turks**, being pressed by the Russians, and overpowered by the cross fire of the two corps, had abandoned the field of battle, leaving a great number of their men upon the field. They no sooner saw the **Austrians** approaching, than they fled towards the main body of the army, which was in the wood, and numerous parties still joined them from the camp of Rymnik. These bodies appeared by degrees on the right wing of the Russians, as if to attack them in the rear ; but little notice was taken of their menaces.

The more the two combined corps advanced in the order described, the more the interval that separated them was also narrowed. The left wing of the **Austrians** opened itself on the right of the skirts of the wood. The Russian platoon formed in a semi-circle, and marched, with loud exclamations,

to the front of the wood, which was intrenched. A dreadful fire proceeded from it, and, to save his men, Suw $\ddot{o}$ row ordered the cavalry to attack in the interval of the platoons, because they might easily penetrate into the wood, through which they might see light behind the intrenchments. In that part there were above fifteen thousand janissaries, mostly armed only with a sabre, called dalglitsch ; and their cavalry covered the two wings of the wood.

The long and formidable line of the cavalry cleared the ditches, and parapets, charged the janissaries, and made a dreadful carnage. The Turks defended themselves most desperately with the sabre and the poniard, and suffered themselves to be cut to pieces upon their cannon, as if they had been chained to them. The carabineers of Starodubow, commanded by Miklaschewski, were the first who rushed forward, with the Imperial and Barko hussars. The Cossacs and the Arnauts, who were in the front of the right wing, fell upon the Turkish cavalry, broke through them every where, and attacked the wood behind ; while the Arnauts of the Austrians and the Hulans performed the same manœuvre on the left wing. All the platoons soon followed the cavalry, and cut in pieces all they found in their way. Colonel Bardakow's platoon of grenadiers, which was the nearest to the Austrians, and those of Kaunitz and Colleredo, distinguished themselves on this occasion.

At four in the afternoon the combined corps were masters of the wood, and the Turks no longer made a stand any where, but fled in the utmost alarm and disorder. Colonel Schershnew was left in the rear,

with his platoon on the part of the Austrians, to keep possession of the wood, and guard the artillery taken from the enemy ; while the rest continued to pursue them. On all sides the ground was covered with dead ; for it was thought expedient not to give the Turks quarter, on account of the immense number of their army, and the weakness of the allied corps. Hence the Russians and Austrians killed all they met, and Poliwanow charged a party with his squadron, and cut five hundred men to pieces.

From the other side of Kringumaelor to the river of Rymnick, is about a mile. This road was encumbered with a great quantity of trains of artillery and caissons, which the Turks had endeavoured to save from the woods ; but not being able to drag them any farther, they had left the matches burning. Hence many of the caissons blew up, which impeded the pursuit, and did much mischief.

The Grand Vizier, a man much esteemed for his courage and his talents, was in a very deplorable state of health, having been attacked with the asthma ; and, contrary to the custom of the Turks, had come in a carriage, though he mounted a horse during the action, and did his utmost to rally his men, and led them back to the charge. He conjured them, in the name of the Alcoran, which he held up before them ; and, to leave no motive untried, he caused two field-pieces, which were near him, and were the only cannon saved, to be pointed, and fired upon them. But his troops were insensible to every thing but fear, and he was wholly unable to re-animate their courage. Osman Bacha was seen sometimes riding among his troops, but without being able to stop their flight.

The victorious forces arrived at sun-set at the river of Rymnick, where a prodigious quantity of men had been drowned, as well as of horses and cattle. Its course was also obstructed in various parts by above a hundred carriages and waggons. All that were able to fly, had hastened to seek their safety on the opposite bank.

The camp of the great army of the Turks was on the hither side of the river; but it was in so filthy a state, that it was scarcely possible to breathe there. In various places were casks of powder, near which the Turks, when taking to flight, had left lighted matches, and they had also buried combustibles, some of which blew up among the troops, and wounded several of the men. In this camp the allied troops made an immense booty, and in the river.

Suworow had previously resolved not to pass the river that day, because the troops, fatigued with the labours of the day, and the long march that preceded it, were in want of rest. He therefore pitched his camp half a mile from Prince Cobourg. This intrepid and indefatigable general soon after came into Suworow's tent, when they congratulated each other with the effusions of the warmest friendship. Several Austrian generals and staff-officers also came to the Russian camp, and General Karatschay could scarcely persuade himself to quit Suworow.

In the evening, Prince Cobourg received a courier from Prince Potemkin. Among other things, this dispatch contained some reproaches on account of the pontoons not having been ready. Prince Cobourg, who, as a prince in the empire,

and in the emperor's service, was not under the command of Potemkin, was much disgusted at this reprimand; and it was said that if the courier had arrived sooner, he would not have engaged the enemy.

Next morning, at day-break, Suworow ordered two regiments of Cossacs to pass the river, together with all the Arnauts, and two squadrons of imperial hussars, to seize the camp, which the enemy had abandoned on the other bank, and pursue them still farther. This was the camp of the grand vizier himself, and considerable riches were found there, together with the large and superb tent of that generalissimo, the interior of which was almost entirely of cloth of gold and silver. A few hundred Turks were also found there, who were cut in pieces.

A great many Turks had also remained in the wood, where they imagined themselves in safety. Prince Cobourg sent some infantry and hussars to scour it, who killed a great many fugitives, and fired at those who had taken refuge in the trees.

Thus terminated the victory gained on the twenty-second September, 1798, over the Ottoman army, commanded by the grand vizier, at Rymnik, on a field of battle five miles in extent. The Austrians have called this victory the battle of Martinesti, from a village of that name, formerly situated on the Rymnik, but which then no longer existed.

The loss of the enemy was five thousand men, who remained upon the field of battle, two thousand killed in the woods, or who died of their wounds, and three thousand drowned in the Rymnik and the

Busco ; among the latter of whom was the Reis Effendi ; in all, ten thousand men. Very few were made prisoners, for the reason already mentioned. The grand vizier, in the account he sent to the grand signior, estimated his loss at twenty thousand, including deserters.

The combined corps suffered very little loss. The Austrians had one hundred and fifty men killed, some of whom were officers, and three hundred wounded. The Russians had only fifty-seven men killed, among whom was one Coffac officer, and one hundred and ten wounded.

They took sixty-eight pieces of cannon, twelve mortars, and a quarter of the siege artillery, with one hundred standards, and a great quantity of ammunition, provisions and cattle.

According to the least exaggerated accounts, the Turkish army consisted of from ninety to one hundred thousand men. The Turks themselves estimated their numbers at one hundred and fifteen thousand, of which sixty or seventy thousand were chosen troops. There were three Bachas with three tails, three of two tails, and many others. The greater part of the troops were cavalry. The allied army, as was stated above, consisted of twenty-five thousand men.

The grand vizier fled, with the remains of his army, to Brahilow, where he remained about a fortnight, to collect his scattered troops ; and, as they were all for retreating beyond the Danube, he was obliged to pass that river and retreat to Schumka, where he was abandoned by the greater part of them. He afterwards retired to his estate in Romelia, for the benefit of his health, which was in

a rapid decline. His court did not punish him for having lost the battle, and he died of his disorder the following year. The Serafskier Haffan Bacha, who had been captain bacha, succeeded him in his office of grand vizier.

It was now proposed to push the advantages of this victory still farther, and the pontoons were already prepared for the passage of the Busco, and march to Brahilow; but fortune put a stop to this project; and certain changes in political affairs caused the two corps to separate. Three days after the battle, Suworow dined with Prince Cobourg, took leave of him as of a friend whom he very highly esteemed, and went to Berlat. The prince set off for Forhani; but soon received orders to enter Wallachia. He entered Bukarest as the conqueror of the grand vizier, and put his troops in winter quarters in that province.

The taking of Bender, and Belgrade, were the immediate consequences of the victory of Rymnik. The first of these places surrendered to Prince Potemkin, on the news of the defeat of the grand vizier, which was brought by some fugitives to the Bacha, who commanded the place. Their lives and property were granted to the garrison, as well as to the inhabitants, with permission to retire beyond the Danube.

Belgrade after its suburbs had been taken by escalade, capitulated to Field-Marshal Laudohn, the 28th September, 1789.

The emperor advanced prince Cobourg to the rank of field-marshall; and conferred on Suworow the dignity of count of the empire.

The empress, truly sensible of his great and important services, overwhelmed him with her favours.

She instantly sent him, as well as to Prince Cobourg, a sword enriched with diamonds, with a branch of laurel, bearing for its device, "To the conqueror of the grand vizier." He received also the order of St. Andrew, decorated with brilliants. These two presents alone were estimated at sixty thousand roubles.

In a short time after, he received the diploma of count of the empire of Russia, with the title of Rymnikski, and the order of St. Andrew, of the first class. By a singular coincidence, the two imperial diplomas were executed by their respective sovereigns, at Vienna and Petersburgh, on the same day.

The officers and soldiers of both corps were rewarded with appropriate favour. The former received advancement, and distinctive decoration, and the latter were gratified with pecuniary recompence. Those who had particularly distinguished themselves, were presented with a medal, bearing the inscription of Rymnik, which they were permitted to wear, as the ornament of their uniform.

The following letters were sent to Suworow, from the Emperor Joseph, of Germany, and the Empress Catharine, of Russia :

*General and Commander-in-Chief.*

" You may readily conceive the pleasure which  
" the victory you obtained on the twenty-first of  
" September, over the grand vizier, has afforded

“ me. I acknowledge myself to be indebted for  
 “ it to the rapidity of your junction with the corps  
 “ of the Prince Cobourg, as well as to your per-  
 “ sonal valour, and the heroism of the troops of  
 “ her majesty, under your command.

“ Receive then as a public testimony of my  
 “ gratitude, the diploma of count of the Holy Ro-  
 “ man Empire, which accompanies this letter. I  
 “ most sincerely hope, that this hereditary title will  
 “ always continue to preserve in your family the  
 “ memory of this glorious battle: and I doubt not,  
 “ that her Imperial majesty, from her peculiar  
 “ good-will to you, general and commander-in-  
 “ chief, and from friendship for me, will permit  
 “ you to except this diploma, and enjoy it. I fur-  
 “ ther desire that you will rest assured of the high  
 “ esteem with which I am, your affectionate,

“ JOSEPH.

“ Vienna, October 19, 1789.”

---

To our Commander-in-Chief Count Suworow  
 Rymnikski.

“ The singular zeal which you have displayed  
 “ for our service on various occasions; the care  
 “ and vigilance of which you have given such an  
 “ example, as commander-in-chief; the uncommon  
 “ ardour, courage, and ability, by which you fig-  
 “ nalized yourself, in attacking, on the 22d of  
 “ September, the numerous Ottoman army, com-  
 “ manded by the grand vizier, on the Rymnik,  
 “ when you gained a complete victory over the

“ enemy, with our troops and those of his majesty  
 “ the Roman emperor, under the command of the  
 “ Prince of Cobourg, are so many distinct claims  
 “ to our Imperial regard. As a testimony of it,  
 “ we name you, according to the institution of  
 “ our military order of Saint George, knight of  
 “ the first class of that order, and we command you  
 “ to wear the decoration which we now send you.

“ CATHARINE.

“ St. Petersburg, October 18, 1789.”

---

*Count Alexander Basilowitsch.*

“ The talents and intrepidity which you have  
 “ displayed in the command of the army at the  
 “ battle of Rymnik, where you have gained a com-  
 “ plete victory over the Grand Vizier, qualify you  
 “ to receive the order of Saint George, of the  
 “ third class.

“ Her Imperial majesty has thought proper thus  
 “ to render justice to your merit. I experience a  
 “ very sensible pleasure in transmitting to you the  
 “ letter of her Imperial majesty, with the decora-  
 “ tion of the order, and I look forward to the  
 “ ardent zeal with which you will fly to new  
 “ exploits, for the service of her Imperial ma-  
 “ jesty.

“ I request of you to be convinced of the real  
 “ esteem and sincere attachment, with which I have  
 “ the honour to be, &c. &c.

“ PRINCE POTEMKIN TAURITSCHEWSKI.  
 “ Cinc' at Bender, Nov. 14, 1789.”

## C H A P. XI.

COUNT Suworow proceeded by easy marches to Berlat, on the Sereth; and encamped on the bank of that river, near the little town of Tekutsch, where he remained some days, and from whence he sent an official report of the battle of Rymnik to Petersburg. He afterwards ordered a public thanksgiving for the victory. He arrived at the camp of Berlat at the latter end of September, and celebrated the festival on the first of October.

During his absence, Lieutenant-General Mcihelowiz had conducted his corps to Faltschi, where he remained some time, under the command of Suworow. There arrived also some regiments of cavalry and infantry, with two regiments of Cossacs, who were also under his command, till he sent them into winter quarters.

At this time, the general engaged in a very friendly intercourse with the Seraskier of Brahilow; and, in order to avoid the effusion of blood between the two armies, they settled the following articles:— The general agreed to give notice to the Seraskier in case he should receive orders to march against him; while the latter engaged to display only an appearance of defence, and to surrender on certain conditions. But insurmountable obstacles presented themselves, which prevented the execution of this plan.

The corps of Cobourg and Suworow were encamped near to each other, on the opposite banks of the Sereth. The generals, officers, and soldiers of both, lived together in the greatest harmony, so

that it appeared as if they belonged to one common sovereign.

After the surrender of Belgrade, the Prince Cobourg had received a very considerable reinforcement from the Bannat; so that, in the spring, his army was augmented to forty-five thousand men.

The design of the Austrians was to open the campaign with Suworow; but as he had not received orders to move, he was still in winter-quarters, when the Prince Cobourg assembled the greatest part of his army at Bucharest; which was in April, 1790. He proceeded to Schursch, but the siege of that place being deferred, he returned to encamp at Bucharest.

Soon after the capture of Bender, Haffan Bacha, who was then Grand Vizier, dispatched a deputy from Schumla to Prince Potemkin, to make propositions of peace. Many couriers passed and repassed on the occasion; appearances seemed to announce serious negociations; and, it is probable, that peace would have been concluded, if the death of Haffan Bacha, which was accelerated by the Divan, had not dissipated that expectation: as the ministers of the Porte were desirous of continuing the war.

Jussuf Bacha, who had been invested with the dignity of Grand Vizier, at the beginning of the first campaign, was, in a short time after the death of Haffan Bacha, again raised to that eminent station. In the month of May, he proceeded to Rutschuck, beyond Schursch, with an army which he had collected at Schumla, and passed the Danube at the first of these places.

His progress was very slow till the end of that month, when the small body of forces, encamped before Schursch, effected his passage. The design of the Grand Vizier was to attack Prince Cobourg at Bucharest; and, if he should be successful, to possess himself, not only of that capital, but of all Wallachia.

In the mean time Suworow had received orders to march and to form a junction with Prince Cobourg. He left behind him at Berlat two battalions with the field-pieces, three squadrons of cavalry, two hundred Cossacs, and five hundred Arnauts. The body of reserve remained upon the Pruth, under the command of Lieutenant-General Count Mélin. He went afterwards with a considerable body of troops to occupy a post at Tekutsch; and Mélin was relieved by Prince Gallitzin.

Suworow, when he ordered his troops out of winter-quarters, fixed the rendezvous at Kilieni, on the opposite bank of the Sereth, where the Austrians had constructed bridges, about twenty miles from Berlat; and the whole corps were collected there at the place appointed.

The corps consisted of four battalions of grenadiers and fusileers, with their field pieces, and twenty pieces of heavy artillery; twelve squadrons of carabiners; four regiments of Cossacs; in all, fifteen thousand men, with two thousand Arnauts. It was commanded by Lieutenant-General Derfelden, and the Major-Generals Londskoy and Posniakow. It encamped for fifteen days at Kilieni; and was, during that time, employed in practising different manœuvres.

About this time, Suworow received the following letter from the Emperor Leopold :—

*General and Commander-in-Chief.*

“ My Field-Marshal, the Prince Cobourg, has  
“ transmitted to me your letter of the 26th of  
“ March. I very highly estimate the sentiments  
“ which you have always entertained for his maje-  
“ ty the emperor, my brother, and that since the  
“ afflicting loss we have sustained by his death, you  
“ promise to preserve them for the support of  
“ the common cause and for myself. The testimo-  
“ nies which you give me of your zeal, afford me  
“ singular satisfaction. Be assured, general, that I  
“ possess a very ardent desire to find an opportunity  
“ to convince you of my high esteem.

“ LEOPOLD.

“ Vienna, May 3, 1790.”

While these various transactions were proceeding, a large party of the Turkish army had passed the Danube. Prince Cobourg gave instant notice of this circumstance to Suworow ; and, at the same time, requested him to draw nearer to him with the Russian forces. The general accordingly set out that very night, and went down the Sereth to Girnefchrie, where he remained a month.

Having received fresh intelligence from Prince Cobourg, who announced that the Turks were in full march, and that they had already sent numerous parties into the interior of the country, the troops were instantly in motion, made ten miles in two days, and encamped at Resipeni on the Buseo.

They suffered very much during this march ; the very hot weather having dried up all the brooks. Mefarosch, the Austrian quarter-master-general, was encamped, with a small body of troops, to the right of the Russians.

Suworow had been some time in this position, when Colonel Fischer arrived, (11th August) charged with a letter from Prince Cobourg, and a verbal message which he had not time to write. By this dispatch, the general was informed that the Grand Vizier had passed the Danube with the greater part of his army ; that his advanced guard appeared at a few miles from Schursch ; and that there was every appearance that the Ottomans would very shortly make their attack.

Suworow immediately gave his orders, and, in three days, he had encamped at Asumaz, two miles from Prince Cobourg, at Bucharest, and eighteen from his last position. The day after his arrival, he paid a visit to the Prince, who returned with him to Afumez, where they arranged the necessary dispositions.

The Russians and Austrians, always animated by the same spirit of union and good will, were delighted at being again united ; and possessed the common ardour to continue the career of duty and glory together. The Turks, however, had called in their advanced guard, as well as all their parties.

The Grand Vizier, Jusluf Bacha, who was at Schursch, had been informed of the junction of Prince Cobourg with Suworow. At the very moment when a peasant gave him this unexpected intelligence, he was occupied in forming the plan of an attack, which he meditated against the Austrians :

and letting the pen fall from his hand, he exclaimed, “What is now to be done !”

The troops, commanded by the Prince Cobourg, consisted of forty thousand men, Germans and Hungarians. There was also some small detachments, distributed in different parts of Wallachia, which might very readily be collected, so that his army might be said to consist of fifty thousand men in a high state of discipline. It would have been, therefore, a matter of difficulty or doubt, to have driven the Turks from Schursch, and to penetrate into Bulgaria.

But the face of affairs was almost instantly changed. In a few days after the junction of the two armies, Colonel Fischer, arrived at Suworow’s camp with the intelligence, that an armistice was agreed upon at Reichenbach, which checked all farther operations, and delivered the Grand Vizier, from his perilous situation.

On the following day, the generals of the allied armies bid adieu to each, with every mark of regard and regret.

Suworow now passed the Buseo to return to Kilieni, where he had already been, and remained there till the end of September. From thence he passed the Sereth, having thrown a bridge of boats over that river, and encamped at Marimeni, at five miles from Galaz.

While he was at Kilieni, Prince Potemkin wrote to him, requesting a particular conference. Suworow conjectured the object of it, and sent him the following answer :—“ The flotilla of row-boats “ will get possession of the mouths of the Danube ; “ Tulcia and Isaccia will fall into our power ; our

"troops, supported by the vessels, will take Ismail,  
"low and Brahilow, and make Tschistow tremble."

In fact, a very short time after, Admiral Ribas entered into the branches of the Danube with the flotilla, gained different advantages over the Turks, and took Tulcia by escalade.

The light troops formed the advanced posts in the vicinity of Galaz: nevertheless, the small Turkish vessels continued to pass between that place and Brahilow, without the least interruption. One night however, there appeared to be a combat between a great number of these boats, the cause and nature of which the Russians could not comprehend. An officer, therefore, was detached, with four chaloupes belonging to the Arnauts, and it was soon discovered that a number of Christian prisoners, to the amount of a hundred of both sexes, having made an attempt to escape, they were pursued and cannonaded in their flight by the Turks. The captives, however, were delivered, and six large Turkish chaloupes taken.

Suworow ordered these chaloupes to be armed with a few pieces of artillery, and frequently manœuvred. He then ordered entrenchments to be formed on the bank, and strengthened with soldiers and artillery. When they were completed, he took up his quarters there, with two battalions of grenadiers and fusileers; and from thence maintained a continual communication with Major-General Ribas. General Derfelden remained with the rest of the troops at Marimeni.

About this time, Suworow received the following letter, from Prince Cobourg, as a monument of the reciprocal regard which was entertained by these

warriors.—*General*, “ I must quit you on Friday next, to take upon me my new command in Hungary ; and no circumstance of my departure is so afflicting to me, as my separation from such a worthy and inestimable friend.

“ I know how to value your elevated character : our friendship has been formed by circumstances of the greatest importance ; and, on every occasion, I have had reason to admire you as a hero, and to cherish you as a man.

“ Judge, then, yourself, my incomparable master, of the regret I suffer in separating myself from a man, who has so many claims upon my particular regard and attachment. You alone can console me, by preserving that affection with which you have already honoured me : and I protest to you, that frequent assurances of your friendship are absolutely necessary to my happiness.

“ I cannot bear the thought of taking a personal leave of you, and in the avowal of this sentiment, I appeal to those of your own breast. I most solemnly declare, that I feel for you the most ardent friendship, and I trust that you will grant me the continuation of yours, which has been, to the present moment, the delight of my military life.

“ Be assured of a return of my most lasting acknowledgements. You will ever be the most cherished friend that heaven has granted me : for no one has an equal claim to the high regard with which I am your excellency’s

“ Most humble servant,

“ PR. COBOURG.”

“ Bucharest, 13 October, 1790.”

Soon after the account of the taking of Tulcia, Suworow had the satisfaction to learn, that Admiral Ribas, the brother of the general of that name, had made himself master of Isaccia. During the operations of the attack, the Christians and Jews, who had made an attempt to quit the place, were escorted by the Turks, to Brahilow.

At the same time General Muller besieged Kilia, where he received several wounds, of which he unfortunately died. This place was most vigorously besieged, during three weeks; but a breach being effected, it surrendered on capitulation to Lieutenant General Sudowitsch, who was immediately advanced to the rank of commander-in-chief.

In the beginning of November, Suworow made his approaches to the important fortress of Ismailow. Admiral Ribas, in a few weeks after, arrived with his flotilla, and not a day passed without an engagement. The Turks had about a hundred and fifty vessels with oars: and Ribas had about a hundred, with seventy chaloupes of Tchrnomer. He very frequently gained considerable advantages, even under the very cannon of the place. He burned or took at least one half of the enemy's vessels, and lost a very few of his own.

At length, the advanced state of the season, and unfortunate weather, obliged him to raise the siege; and the land-forces retired from before Ismailow, to enter into winter quarters.

## C H A P. XII.

THE troops were already on their march, when General Suworow received an order, from Field-Marshal Prince Potemkin, to repair from Galaz to Ismailow, and to take the place at all hazards.

He was perfectly aware of the great danger and risk of such an enterprize, from the advanced state of the season; nor did it appear probable that any thing decisive could be accomplished against so strong a place; and which the Turks regarded as impregnable, from its numerous garrison. Nevertheless, he instantly obeyed the command which he had received.

He made all the necessary dispositions for this extraordinary undertaking, and arrived on the second day at Ismailow, which is twenty miles from Galaz.

Admiral Ribas remained with his flotilla, on his former station, on the Danube. He also fortified an Island over against Ismailow, where he had established batteries, from which he annoyed the town with bombs, and oftentimes set it on fire. The Ottoman fleet had been so much weakened, that it dared not venture on an engagement, but kept its position in the harbour, and under the protection of the place.

All the different corps, which he had ordered with the utmost expedition from different parts, were collected at their appointed rendezvous, before Ismailow, within four days after the general himself had arrived there.

His army, by sea and land, consisted of twenty-three thousand men, one half of which were Cossacs; among whom were a great number of sick, on account of the bad season. The horses also had but a small portion of forage. Besides, the weather became extremely cold, so that the soldiers were obliged to cut the reeds, which grow in that marshy country, to serve as fuel.

Without losing a moment, the general ordered forty scaling-ladders, and two thousand fascines, to be instantly prepared on the spot, while parties were dispatched to get them from other places, where they had been previously commanded. In the mean time the troops were exercised, during the night, in the use and application of them.

He not only reconnoitered the place himself, with the most minute attention, but ordered all his general officers to do the same: in order that in every division, there might be a commanding officer, completely qualified to direct the columns in the projected assault. The Turks, at first, discharged a few cannon at the reconnoitering party, but without effect; and they did not even make one sally to interrupt them.

As soon as the first observations had been made, Reischoff, major-general of artillery, and Prince Charles de Ligne, an Austrian engineer, caused batteries to be erected on the two wings, during the night, thirty or forty toises from the town. For want of heavy siege artillery, which had been before sent to Bender and Kilia, these batteries were only mounted with twelve pounder field-pieces and licornes, making in the whole, forty pieces of cannon, which was all the field artillery they possessed.

The erection of these batteries was only a mask, to make the Turks believe the town would be besieged in a regular manner, and to prevent them from suspecting a sudden scalade. During this first night they did not in the least disturb the workmen. Zalotuchin was posted under the battery to the right, with the Fanagor regiment of grenadiers; and general Kulufow under that to the left, with four battalions of the corps of Buch chasseurs. At break of day the batteries began to play upon the town, and were answered by a very quick fire, though without doing much mischief.

The town of Ismailow, which is a mile in circumference from the Danube round to the water again, and stretches half a mile along the bank of the river, has eight bastions. The ramparts are, in general, three toises high, and in some places four; the moat is six or seven toises deep, and half way between the polygons of Bender and of Brock was a fausse-braie, or false trench. These were all the internal works, and near the town was a chevalier in stone work, which might hold some thousand men. The side next the water was defended by ramparts and horizontal batteries.

The Russian army lay in a semi-circular form, half a mile from the town. Some of the troops were still nearer, but were obliged to move to a greater distance, because they were annoyed by the heavy cannon. These troops formed a segment of a circle, of about three miles from one part of the river to the other.

The Rear-Admiral Ribas was incessantly cannonading the place, and the remains of the Turkish flotilla, which made but a feeble return to his fire,

He approached the town two days before the assault, and burned or sunk almost all the ships that remained. He only lost a brigantine, which blew up with two hundred men on board.

The Serafzier Auduslu-Bacha, an old warrior, who had twice refused the dignity of Grand Vizier, had the command in Ismailow. The troops of the garrison, which were under the orders of seven sultans, consisted of forty-three thousand men, nearly half of whom were Janissaries, eight thousand cavalry, various corps who had come from several fortified towns that had surrendered by capitulation, as Chorin, Ackerman, and Palanha, and a part of the garrison of Bender, and that of Kilia. These troops had been left there as a punishment, and it has been since learned, that the Grand Seignior published a firman forbidding this garrison to surrender on any case whatever; and ordered the Serafzier, if they should not perform their duty, to cut off the heads of those who should be found beyond the Danube, without form of trial. Thus there was every reason to believe the Turks would defend themselves to the last extremity.

On the 9th of December, Suworow sent a letter of Prince Potemkin to the Serafzier, to which he added a few lines from himself, to induce him to surrender; to which the Serafzier replied, by a long Arabic letter, in a very bombastic style, the substance of which was, that he advised the Russians to retreat.

“ As the season being bad and far advanced, they would be in want of all kinds of necessaries; whereas the town was abundantly provided; or,

“ if not, he demanded a delay of a month, to communicate with the grand vizier.”

The next day, an officer, who spoke the Turkish language tolerably well, was sent into the town, and had an interview with a bim-bacha; who told him, in their oriental style, that, “ The Danube would cease to flow, or the heavens bow down to the earth, before Ismailow would surrender to the Russians.”

Suworow, however, determined to make one more effort ; and therefore sent a note to the Seraskier, in which he gave him his word of honour, that unless he hung out the white flag that very day, the place would be taken by assault, and all the garrison put to the sword.

Many of the Ottomans were disposed to surrender, but the Seraskier, who was of opinion to run all risks, had the majority of voices with him. He therefore returned no answer to the note. Suworow, the same day, assembled a council of war, where the subalterns voted first. He addressed them, as he did afterwards all the corps, in a very manly and energetic speech. Having pointed out to them the difficulties of the enterprize, and the means of surmounting them, “ Brave warriors,” said he, “ remember this day all your former victories, and continue to prove, that nothing can resist the force of the Russian arms : we are not now deliberating on an operation, which may be deferred to a future time, but on the taking a place of importance, the possession of which will decide the fate of our campaign, and which the haughty Ottomans believe impregnable. Twice has the Russian army already laid siege to Ismailow, and

“ twice it has retreated from it. This third time nothing remains for us, but to conquer, or “ to die with glory.” The general found his army full of resolution, his speech still farther enflamed the zeal of his brave troops, and their accustomed valour now encreased to enthusiasm.

With this spirit was the assault of Ismailow agreed to and decided.

Suworow now received a dispatch from Prince Potemkin, with dispatches, representing, “ That if he was not certain of success, it were better not to risk the assault ;” to which Suworow replied in a few words ; “ My plan is fixed. The Russian army has already been twice at the gates of Ismailow, and it would be shameful for them to retreat from them a third time, without entering the place.”

In the evening, some of the Cossacs had deserted, and gone over to the enemy ; and the report of this incident had not been immediately brought to the general's quarters. The Turks, as was afterwards learned, at first intended to make a strong sally, against the two batteries, with eight thousand janissaries, and four thousand spahis, and to attack, with two thousand Tartars, the general's quarters, which, according to Suworow's custom, was defended with but a small guard. This sally would have been fatal to the besiegers, especially on account of their artillery, which consisted of no more than a few field-pieces. Fortunately, however, the assault commenced very early in the morning, and put an end to that project. The Turks, however, were not attacked unawares ; and a great part of the garrison, who had been under arms all night, were upon the

ramparts. It is probable, therefore, the information given by the deserters had roused the vigilance of the enemy.

Suworow acted the more wisely, in accelerating the execution of his plan, as had he postponed the assault a single day, he must perhaps have renounced it altogether ; for in the evening after it took place, a thick fog arose, which made the ground very slippery, and it would have been impossible to mount the ramparts ; an obstacle which it would have continued throughout the winter.

To lull the Turks in security, and make them believe the besiegers were in want of ammunition, they very rarely fired the guns of the batteries, and of the fleet, during the night preceding the assault. All the measures, however were taken, and the orders given for the operation. All the besiegers were ready ; and Suworow passed the night by the fire side, with some officers of his suite, in an impatient vigilance for the hour when the signals were to be given.

At three in the morning the first musket was fired, which was the signal to prepare for the assault.

The second was at four which was the signal to form.

And the third, at five, which was the signal to assault. The six columns of land troops, and the three columns of the fleet, instantly approached the town.

On the right flank of the land-troops, were three columns, under the command of Lieutenant-General Potemkin ; and the three columns, on the left, were commanded by Lieutenant-General Samoilow.

The fleet of galleys, and that of Tschornomor, were under the command of Rear-Admiral Ribas, and the whole was directed by the General-in Chief Count Suworow, who had placed himself in the centre, with a part of his staff between the columns, in order to see every thing, and to give his orders with facility.

The first column, commanded by Major-General Lewow, consisted of one hundred and fifty arquebusiers, a battalion of chasseurs from White Russia, and two battalions of Fanagor grenadiers; the body of reserve consisted of two battalions of the same. The second column, commanded by Major-General Lacey, consisted of one hundred and fifty arquebusiers, three battalions of Catharinoflaw Chasers; and the body of reserve, of the fourth battalion of the same corps. The third column commanded by Major-General Maknob, consisted of one hundred and fifty chasseurs, three battalions of Livonian chasseurs, and two battalions of Twuitz musketeers, as a body of reserve. The fourth and fifth were commanded by the Major-General of the day, Count Besborydko; and the one consisting of two thousand five hundred Cossacs, from the Don, with a body of reserve of five hundred, and the other of five thousand Cossacs, (new recruits,) with a body of reserve of one thousand Arnauts. These two columns had besides two battalions of Poloski fusileers.

The sixth column, commanded by Major-General Kotusow, consisted of one hundred and twenty arquebusiers, three battalions of Buch chasseurs, and a body of reserve of two battalions of Cherson grenadiers.

The cavalry were posted a furlong from the town, under the cannon of the fortifications. On the right wing were six squadrons of Sewer carabineers, and two regiments of Don Cossac; on the left, ten squadrons of of Woroni hussars, and two regiments of Don Cossacs.

The Cossacs of the fourth and fifth columns, who were to make the assault, were all on foot, and most of them had reduced their pikes to five feet in length in order to use them with the more ease in the confusion of the attack.

The first column on the Danube, which was under the command of Major-General Absenief, consisted of two battalions of Nicolaevs grenadiers of marines, one battalion of chasseurs, and two thousand five hundred Tschornomor Cossacs. They were placed on board a Brigantine, two floating batteries, three double chaloupes, thirteen lansons, and fifteen boats from Tschornomor. The second column which, was under Hetman Tschipecka, consisted of two battalions of Alezeopol musketeers, two hundred Dneprow grenadiers of marines, and one thousand Tschronomor Cossacs. They had one hundred and thirty-five pieces of cannon and a mortar, as well as the first column, and were stationed on board the same number of vessels. The third column under the orders of Major Markow, of the guards, consisted of two battalions of the Dneprow grenadiers of marines, two battalions of chasseurs from White Russia, one battalion of Buch chasseurs, and one hundred Tschornomor Cossacs. The body of reserve consisted of four transports, carrying twenty-four pounders, and one hundred Tschonomor boats, intended to disembark the regulars, having one or two

cannon on board ; making together one hundred and fifty vessels. The total of the artillery on board was five hundred and sixty-seven pieces of cannon, and twenty mortars.

Among the troops that were embarked were Prince Charles de Ligne, Colonel Duke de Fronfzac, afterwards Duke de Richlieu, and Count Langeron : Count Valerian Zubow, colonel and adjutant of the Empress, commanded the two battalions of grenadiers in the first column.

The weather, which throughout the night, had been clear and serene, became gloomy and foggy till nine in the morning. All the columns marched against the town in the best order, and in the greatest silence ; and the turks did not fire a gun till the Russians were within three or four hundred paces of the town ; when they were saluted with a very quick fire of case-shot, which did great mischief.

They now approached the deep moat, where the water was in some places up to the shoulders, threw their fascines into it, passed over them, and raised their scaling-ladders against the ramparts, some parts of which were so high, that it was necessary to fasten two ladders together, although five toises long ; and as in many places the besiegers could not do this with sufficient expedition, they assisted each other, and with equal alertness and address, climbed to the top of the ramparts by means of their bayonets.

The arquebusiers of each column were on the edge of the moat, from which, notwithstanding the darkness of the night, they took aim, whenever the fire of the artillery permitted them, at the Turks who defended the ramparts. The troops were now

advanced from every side towards the principal points, and General Lacey, who had the second column, was the first on the rampart soon after six in the morning. The first and third columns were to have supported him, but were retarded; and the first in particular was greatly embarrassed. Thus Lacey was very closely pressed; for although his troops had already drawn the Turks from the parapet, they had to encounter seven thousand men, who with drawn sabres, hindered them from advancing any farther. Soon after the two columns, that followed, came up with him.

The first was guilty of a terrible mistake; after having cleared the ditch, it came to a chain of very strong palisades, which extended to the banks of the Danube: this they leaped over, and passing another ditch behind them reached the ramparts. The grenadiers of Fanagor took the first bastion, but, on attacking a stone platform, which was between the first and second bastion, without orders, they sustained a very great loss. Colonel Zalotuchin now called them from the platform, to take the second bastion: when General Merknob received a mortal wound, and Colonel Kwaftow took the command of his column.

The Russians performed wonders; though, in consequence of this inconsiderate attack, they had greatly suffered; and the Turks, by a sally of eight or ten thousand men accompanied with women armed with poniards, made great havoc among them: at length, however, reinforcements arrived, the enemy was driven back, and the Russians possessed themselves of the second bastion. But as every bastion had a magazine of powder under it, a strong

guard was instantly placed to prevent the troops from being blown into the air. The Russians at length also, after a bloody conflict, got possession of the post of Bender and the bridge, and, though most vigorously attacked, retained their position.

Day now began to appear ; but during the night the reciprocal advantages, which were gained by the hostile parties, were known by the exclamations of *Huzza !* on the side of the Russians, and *Allah !* on that of the Turks.

At the same time that the columns of troops proceeded against the place by land ; the columns of vessels, being informed of the movement, by the discharge of a rocket proceeded by water to the same object. They advanced, under a constant fire, in two lines. The first consisted of a hundred boats of *Tschornomor*, full of troops appointed to make a descent. The second line was composed of brigantines, floating batteries, double chaloupes, and other vessels ; and as they approached, the fire of the Turks increased. Among other batteries on the water side, they possessed a work, which, though it had but little elevation, was extremely strong, being defended by eighty-three pieces of cannon ; the greatest part of a large calibre, together with fifteen mortars and a howitzer, which discharged five hundred pounds weight of ball.

The fire from the mortars of the second line, covered the cannonade of the first ; and when they had both come within two hundred paces of the shore, the second line divided, and placed itself upon the two wings of the first ; by which manœuvre the whole was thrown into a semicircle. The Turks made a most determined opposition during an hour ;

but, as it was night, no mischief was done: a few Russian vessels alone suffered, and at seven in the morning the descent was effected.

At eight, the Russians were masters of the place on the side of the water, as well as on that of the land. The assault was then at an end, and the contest commenced in the interior of the town, in the streets, and in the public squares. Nor was there an open spot where men could engage that was not the scene of combat. The Turks defended themselves with the most desperate courage and availed themselves of the windows to annoy their invaders.

There remained only to be taken one large stone platform, very strongly fortified, and several chanas, stone buildings, constructed with great strength, which were filled with people, and defended by cannon. Though defended with a most obstinate courage, they were all taken, with prodigious slaughter.

The unfortunate Seraskier, Anduslu Bacha, having retired into one of these chanas with two thousand of the flower of his Janissaries, and several pieces of cannon, thought himself secure from all danger. But nothing was impregnable before the bold designs of Suworow, and the dauntless rapidity of his soldiers. The Seraskier and his people, at length found all defence vain, and therefore surrendered to the Russians. As he wore a rich poniard in his girdle, a chasseur, eager after plunder, endeavoured to seize it, when a Janissary stood forth as the protector of his fallen master. The Russians immediately fell upon the prisoners, massacred the greatest part, and the Seraskier among them.

The streets of Ismailow being in general very narrow, the general had not suffered the cavalry to enter the town. The land-troops, therefore, as well as those which had disembarked from the ships, penetrated by degrees, to the centre of it, combating as they proceeded with small bodies of Turks, who defended themselves with the utmost bravery, and retreated only step by step.

In the afternoon, General Lacey arrived, in the middle of the city, with three battalions of chasseurs, and fell upon about one thousand men, almost all Tartars, and armed with long pikes. These Tartars were dismounted, and had precipitately retreated into an Armenian convent, surrounded with thick walls. He immediately attacked it, and broke open the doors with his artillery, and entered it. The young Machsut Gheray Sultan, defended himself bravely with his troops ; and, after a long engagement, with only three hundred men remaining, and without any hopes of relief, he laid down his arms, asked for quarters, and was taken prisoner, with the rest of his people.

The Cossacs of the fourth and fifth columns, who had, at the same time, entered by the gates of Bender and Kilia, having advanced into the city, were assailed in the great square, by a superior number of the enemy, and were completely cut off. But they were soon succoured by a battalion of Buch chasseurs, to which were added some Tschornomor Cossacs, who attacked the Turks in the rear, and defeated them after an hour's engagement.

Kablan Gheray, brother of the Khan, the bravest of the seven sultans, who were stationed at Ismailow, and the same who had performed such prodigies of

valour at Schursch, against the Austrians, ordered an alarm to be beat, assembled his troops, and hastened to the market-place, in the centre of the town, with about two thousand Turks and Tartars, who were soon joined by a still more numerous body of the enemy, together with a considerable body of the cavalry. The sultan charged the Tschornomor Cossacs in the most desperate manner, to the sound of the Asiatic music, killed several, threw them into disorder, and took two pieces of cannon. Immediately a reinforcement arrived, consisting of Cossacs, a battalion of chasseurs, and two battalions of grenadiers of marines. The sultan was surrounded; at the same time the combat continued with fury, the Russians recovered and pursued their advantages, and the Turkish cavalry and the Janissaries were destroyed with redoubled blows of pikes and bayonets. The sultan himself fell, and nearly four thousand men remained upon the spot, after the massacre of an hour, when scarcely five hundred Ottomans escaped; who surrendered themselves prisoners.

The stone platform still held out. During the last engagement, Ribas came to attack it with two battalions of grenadiers of marines, one battalion of chasseurs, and one thousand Tschornomor Cossacs. This platform, or cavalier, was occupied by the Meaphis, or governor, of Isnailow, with above two thousand Janissaries and other infantry, and some pieces of cannon. It held out a long time, but having scarcely any hopes of success, knowing that all around him were defeated, and fearing perhaps to share the same fate, he would not push matters

to extremities, and surrendered, together with his troops. Ribas restored to this governor his sabre and other arms.

There now remained to be taken only a very strong chana, about a werst from the chavalier, and the rampart. Ribas also took upon himself this commission, and became master of it, after a very short engagement, as also a few hundred men, who had fled thither.

At two in the afternoon the land-troops and marines occupied the centre of the city ; upon which Suworow caused four squadrons of caribineers, four squadrons of hussars, and two regiments of Cossacs, to enter the two wings, by the gates of Brock and Bender, in order to clear the streets, where a few of the enemy might remain dispersed. In their road they cut down several Turks, who still possessed the desperate rashness and folly to defend themselves. The cavalry afterwards dismounted ; and, with sword in hand, fought for those, who concealed themselves. They gave quarters to all those who surrendered themselves prisoners.

After a bloody assault of which history affords no example, the victory of the Russians was complete, and they were absolute masters of Ismailow by four o'clock, P. M. This terrible defence, made by so many thousand Turks, had the appearance of rage and fury ; and even women fell upon the Russian soldiers with poniards and other weapons. All the Russian commanders ran to meet the danger with the most heroic valour, and the soldiers fought like lions. They were engaged during six hours, without caring for the superiority of the enemy, whom they attacked without ceasing,

and who incessantly surrounded them with new parties. No exertions could arrest their indefatigable activity ; no danger disturbed their inflexible intripidity. Here we should retail the numerous acts of bravery and heroism, which deserve the admiration of mankind, if the limits of our plan would admit of giving a more extensive account of this assault. We shall confine ourselves to observing that, some days after, several of the Russian officers shuddered at the sight of the abysses they had passed in the night, and the steep heights they had scaled. Those among them, who had been at the taking of Oczakow, could not compare the two actions ; and all agreed that the taking of Ismail was the most illustrious monument of Russian glory.

These same warriors, who, ten hours before, were waiting in silence for the signal of an uncertain and formidable contest, now saw the bodies of their enemies heaped at their feet, and their arms bathed in a deluge of blood, that filled the streets and public squares. The calm of victory soon succeeded to the fury of the battle ; and order was restored at the voice of their commanders, who remained. Several battalions of grenadiers and Cossacs, who had lost half their officers, were commanded by those of the fusileers and chasseurs.

Guards were posted at various parts of the city, and also upon the ramparts. A battalion of Fanganor grenadiers formed the principal guard, in the market-place ; a few battalions were stationed on the ramparts ; strong guards were posted at the gates, powder-magazines, cross ways, churches, and mosques ; and patroles were ordered to go their

rounds through all the streets. Suworow appointed Major-General Kotusow commandant of Ismailow.

Firing, however, was heard throughout the night, and even till the next morning, because many Turks remained dispersed in the mosques, houses, cellars, and barns. Many of these were killed, but the greater part surrendered themselves prisoners.

The town being taken by assault, the soldiers were permitted to plunder during three days, as had been promised ; a scene which could not pass without fresh bloodshed, because many of the Turks preferred losing their lives to parting with their property.

Suworow informed Prince Potemkin of the victory, by this Spartan epistle : " The Russian colours wave on the ramparts of Ismailow." The prince was, at that time, at Bender, where the cannonading was distinctly heard.

Lieutenant-Generals Potemkin and Samoilow met Suworow, before Bender, at the gate, where they all three dismounted, cordially embraced and congratulated each other on this important victory.

The next day a solemn festival was celebrated on the occasion, at the church of the convent of St. John ; the heavy artillery, that had been taken was fired from all the ramparts, and all the generals assisted ; together with the greater part of the staff and superior officers. They congratulated and embraced each other on all sides, with tears of joy ; and every one considered both his own life and that of his friend as a gift of heaven : for every one attributed it to a peculiar favour of Providence,

that he had escaped so many dangers, and had not shared the fate of the numerous warriors, who had purchased the victory with their lives. Several persons also appeared who were supposed to have been killed the night before.

After divine service, Suworow went to the principal guard, where his Fanagor battalion was posted, paid a tribute of well merited praise to that troop, which had so much distinguished themselves for their bravery; and then rendered the same justice, and expressed the same gratitude, to all the other corps, both officers and soldiers, to whose valour he was indebted for the taking of Ismailow.

The official report, to be sent to the court, was now prepared, and enquiry was made to discover the number of those who had fallen during the assault. The great quantity of those victims was apparent, not only from the declarations of the prisoners, but from the ruins of the houses in the streets, public squares, and upon the ramparts.

In this one dreadful day, the Ottomans lost, by the superiority of the Russian arms, though their numbers were far inferior, thirty-three thousand men killed, or dangerously wounded; and about ten thousand, as well bachas and officers, as soldiers, were taken prisoners, among whom two hundred Tartars. Six thousand women and children, two thousand Christians of Moldavia and Arminia, and above five hundred Jews must be added to the number.

Among the dead were six sultans, the Seraskier, and a bacha of Arnauts, both with three tails; the two governors of Kilia and Akerman, a bacha-

commandment, an aga of Janissaries, and about fifty-bimbachas, topschi-bachas, and others.

Among the prisoners, were the Sultan Machful-Gharay, the governor of Ismailow, who was a bacha of three tails and several other bachas.

On the part of the Russians, the loss, according to the official report, consisted of one thousand eight hundred and thirty killed, among whom were four hundred Fanagor grenadiers, and two thousand five hundred wounded.

Among the killed were a brigadier, and sixty-five superior and staff officers, who were chiefly cut down with the sabre : among the wounded were three major-generals, (one of whom, namely Mek-nob, died soon after,) and two hundred and twenty superior and staff officers.

Although it was now the dead of winter, it became indispensably necessary to take precautions, to prevent this unexampled heap of dead bodies from occasioning epidemical disorders, and even the plague. Hence, the ten thousand prisoners were employed in carrying off the bodies of their countrymen, and of their horses ; and as pits could not be dug quick enough, on account of the earth being frozen, they were all thrown into the Danube, and the whole business was completed in the course of six days.

The Russians attended to the interring their own dead, which was done without the city, according to the custom of their church. Many officers, whose bodies were not mangled, and who therefore were recognized, were placed in the cemetery, and Brigadier Ribopierre received funeral honours, in the church of the convent of St. John, near Gene-

ral Weissman, who had been buried there in the first war with the Turks.

It is worthy of remark, that of so large a garrison, as that of Ismailow, only one man escaped. Being slightly wounded, and having fallen into the Danube, he accidentally caught hold of a plank, on which he reached the opposite bank. It was this man that carried the grand vizier the first news of the loss of the town.

The riches captured there were of great magnitude and importance, and the soldiers made a considerable booty.

The Russians found two hundred and thirty-two pieces of cannon, including thirty two guns, on board eight lansfons, which were the only remains of the rowing vessels. Excepting ten iron guns, all the rest were brass, mostly of a great calibre, culverins, mortars, and howitzers.

There were also many large and small magazines, with a considerable quantity of powder.

A quantity of bombs and balls, which were not weighed.

Three hundred and forty-five standards, almost all stained with blood, of which two were Sainjack, great banners of the governors of Bender and Ismailow, of which there are but five in the Ottoman empire; the superb and unique great banner of the khan of the Tartars; seven rich Burschuks, or horse tails; and the soldiers had taken several others.

Two hundred and fifty standard poles: most of the standards, which were of a rich stuff, embroidered in gold and silver, having been torn off by the soldiers and the Cossacs, for girdles, or trophies, and many lost.

A great stock of barley, with which the Turks feed their horses, and a large quantity of hay; flour for the whole turkish army, for six months; a great deal of dried, smoked, and salt meat; and a vast number of horned cattle.

¶ Coffee, tobacco, rice, sugar, and abundance of all kinds of provisions, besides a great riches in the shops. In addition to those belonging to Ismailow, which is a town of brisk trade, a great deal of property had been removed thither, from the towns that had capitulated; as, for instance, Kilia, Chorin, Akerinan, and Bender.

About ten thousand horses, many of which were uncommonly beautiful, together with a great quantity of very rich trappings.

Lastly, the total value of the riches found at Ismailow, was estimated at ten millions of piafres.

Suworow who was inaccessible to any views of private interest, abstained according to his custom, from appropriating to himself the smallest article; he did not even take a horse. Satisfied with the glory he had gained there, he departed from Ismailow as thither he arrived.

Two days after this capture Rear-Admiral Ribas gave a great dinner on board the fleet, and fired a salute from all the guns. Lieutenant-General Potemkin, also gave a dinner the next day, at which the young Sultan Machsut-Gheray, and the governor of Ismailow were present. They seemed pleased, and took part in the entertainment, without suffering it to appear, whether their gaiety was the effect of surprise, dissimulation, or insensibility.

As soon as the dead were carried off, and the streets cleared, all of which had served as fields of

battle, arrangements were made for the departure of the troops, and the removal of the prisoners, who were escorted by a regiment of Cossacs, that was going into Russia to winter quarters, by Bender. Suworow gave the command of this escort to a lieutenant-colonel of his suite, who was instructed to take care every one should be treated with a humane attention.

To reduce this numerous escort, and the embarrassment of watching so many prisoners, Suworow permitted the officers to chuse and keep such of the prisoners of both sexes as suited them, engaging at the same time, in writing, to provide for their maintenance and support, and to treat them with kindness.

A week after the taking of Ismailow, the general set off for Galaz, with his regiment of Fanagor grenadiers, and the rest of the troops of which his corps was composed ; excepting the sick and wounded, for whom an hospital had been immediately established, within the town. General Kotusow remained there as commandant with his four battalions of Buch chasseurs, two regiments of infantry, and four regiments of Don Cossacs. The other corps drew off towards Bender to go into winter quarters.

Shortly before the assault, an Austrian officer brought a letter from the Emperor Leopold to Suworow, but he laid it aside without allowing himself time to read it, so entirely was he engrossed with his arrangement for the attack. This was the emperor's answer to a complimentary letter from Suworow on his coronation. He also received,

soon after his arrival at Galaz, a letter from his friend the Prince of Cobourg, expressing the greatest pleasure at this great victory, and pointing out the great importance of the capture of Ismailow to the house of Austria: an observation which was soon confirmed by the impression this news produced at Sistow, where the conferences were interrupted for several days, and occasioned by this event the greatest confusion.

The emperor's letter was to the following effect:

" My dear Count Suworow,

“ I shall ever remember the important services you  
“ have rendered to my house in the course of the  
“ war, which is now about to terminate. I was  
“ the more affected by the contents of your letter  
“ of the eighth of this month, as I am convinced of  
“ the sincerity of sentiments, and your attachment.  
“ Be assured, that on my part I shall contemplate  
“ with pleasure every opportunity of demonstrat-  
“ ing the distinguished regard with which I am,  
“ your’s, affectionately,

(Signed) "LEOPOLD."

Vienna, November 25, 1790.

In the month of January, 1791, Suworow went to Petersburg, where the empress received him with the most distinguishing marks of satisfaction. Soon after his arrival, he was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the Preobrascheniki guards, and the empress ordered a large medal to be struck in gold and in silver, in commemoration of the important victory, which the general had obtained.

## C H A P. XIII.

HIS JOURNEY TO THE FRONTIERS OF SWEDEN.

THOUGH the King of Sweden had, in the preceding year, signed a treaty of peace with Russia, yet the war with the Turks not being yet terminated, the ministers of foreign powers endeavoured to stimulate Sweden to a rupture with Russia. Their endeavours, however did not prove successful.

Suworow, who was appointed to the command of the troops in Finland, received from the hands of the empress orders to inspect the frontiers of that province, and to furnish a plan of fortification. In less than four weeks he returned, gave in his report, and soon after set off again to superintend the works of which he had himself suggested.

The prince of Nassau-Seigen, chief admiral of the fleet, stationed off the coasts of Finland, had obtained permission from the empress to go and join the French princes on the Rhine, to serve against the French revolution. At his departure, therefore, Suworow had the command both of the fleet and of the land-forces.

They amounted together to twenty-five thousand men. The fleet consisted of eight rowing frigates, six chebecs, a bomb vessel, a yacht, one hundred gun boats, and nine floating batteries; carrying in all eight hundred and fifty guns. They were commanded by Admiral Traversoy, and Major-General Herrmann.

In 1791 and 1792 a part of this fleet wintered in

the southern ports, and the rest in the new port of Rotschow-halm, on the frontiers of Sweden. But, during the summer, a fleet of vessels sailing came to cruise in the offing of those seas, and a part of the squadron of rowing vessels kept in shore.

The great tower of Neuschlott happening to blow up shortly after the peace with Sweden, and Suworow being appointed to take measures for repairing it, he substituted in its place a large bastion calculated for horizontal fire.

He erected on the banks of the Kymen, which washes the frontiers of Sweden, the small redoubts at Parla and at Utti, the forts of Oltinoi and Likola, and the fortress of Kymen-Gorord. The latter covered towards the land, the fine harbour of Rot-scherhalm, which is formed of several islands, and is not commanded on any side. These isles are well fortified; and on a sand-bank, at some distance in the sea, which is remarkable for its stone tower, called *Gloria*, there are sixty cannon of very large calibre; and the harbour in all parts is defended by nine hundred pieces of artillery, of different sizes and construction.

When Suworow returned to Petersburg, the empress said, on receiving him, " You have made me a present of a new port." But her imperial majesty did not confine her munificence, in acknowledging the zeal of her subjects, to flattering expressions, calculated as they were to inflame it.

Peace was concluded with the Turks in December, 1791, by Count Besborello at Jassy. Prince Potemkin had died in the vicinity of that place a few months before.

By this treaty of peace the Porte ceded to Russia

the important town of Oczakow, and all its district, to the Dniester. This loss was very severely felt by the Grand Seignior ; who far from expecting to make such a sacrifice, had flattered himself with the hope of retaking the Crimea.

But, as it too often happens, though peace was made, the embers of war were not extinguished. They were kept alive by the humiliating reflections of the Divan ; while the court of France hoped to blow them into a flame, by the insinuations of its minister Sémonville, who promised the Porte, for the next year, a large fleet, and a considerable body of troops.

It was therefore, necessary that Russia should take measures for the security of its new frontiers. Suworow was accordingly dispatched thither, at the end of the year 1792, and received the command of the troops in the three governments of Catherinoflow, the Crimea, and the province lately conquered to the mouth of the Dniester. He established his headquarters at Cherson, where he remained for two years.

During his residence there, he received the following letter from the empress, on account of the rejoicings made for the peace.

*Count Alexander Bafilowitsch.*

“ The day on which the peace is celebrated,  
“ recalls to us your signal services and exploits.  
“ We accordingly present you with a diploma,  
“ signed by our own hand, which contains an enu-  
“ meration of the different acts of zeal, and of valour  
“ by which you have constantly distinguished your-

“ self in the course of your long and glorious career.  
 “ In testimony of our confidence in your discern-  
 “ ment and equity, we transmit to you a military  
 “ order of St. George, of the second class, with  
 “ which you may decorate him whom you shall  
 “ judge most worthy of it, from his bravery and  
 “ his talents.

“ At the same time, we send you a ribbon of  
 “ your order, and a ring, as tokens of our Imperial  
 “ good-will.

“ CATHARINE.”

*Petersburg, Sept. 7, 1793.*”

The ring and the ribbon, which was enriched with diamonds, were valued together, at fifty thousand rubles.

---

## CHAP. XIV.

### WAR IN POLAND IN 1794.

FROM 1792 to 1794 no political events called fourth Suworow to signalize himself by military exploits : an interval during which he enjoyed the sweets of repose, at Cherson, on the utmost borders of the Russian empire towards Turkey. Yet to him this repose was but another species of activity, though somewhat less fatigued than the stormy occupation of war. He often reviewed the troops under his command, and made them go through their various manœuvres ; he traversed the Cimea to inspect the fortifications of that province, and to

put the frontiers in a respectable state of defence ; and, in the spring, distributed over that country a part of the troops, which had passed the winter in the interior of Little Russia, and on the confines of Red Russia.

At the same period, all the fleet, which was at his disposal, and commanded by Rear-Admiral Ribas, weighed anchor, in order to cruise off the mouth of the Danube. Suworow went to Cherson, and inspected the new fortifications, erected under the direction of Colonel de Bolant, in the provinces recently conquered from the Turks, opposite Bender, and on the banks of the Danube and the Black Sea ; and had the satisfaction to see that great progress had been made. He stayed several weeks at Oczakow, and intended frequently to renew his visits to the frontiers, had not his presence been speedily required to a distant scene, where the power of his arms was not less renowned.

After the Polish confederation of the third of May, 1791, a second, as is well known, took place, at Grodno, under the protection of the Empress of Russia, and the King of Prussia. In April, 1793, at the close of this congress, the Polish troops dispersed over the Ukraine, entered into the service of Russia, and were divided under the commands of various Russian commanders. These troops, the General-in-Chief Prince Dolgoruckow, and Count Ivan Saltikow had successively under their command in Red Russia. At first they conducted themselves in a peaceable manner, although there was little ground to rely on their docility ; but when the insurrection of Poland broke out at Crakow, and Warsaw became the theatre of so many bloody

scenes, their fatal influence speedily manifested itself, and at length a mutiny broke out among them in the beginning of April, 1794.

The light-horse regiments of Zitomir and Constantinow were in the environs of Norvoi Mirgorod, and amounted to nearly fifteen thousand men. They took up arms during the night, penetrated into the general's quarters, seized the standards and drums, and then fled to Bialacre. Only three hundred and forty men, together with all their officers, remained behind. Major-General Daskow harangued them, and kept them to their duty: the rest pursued their way as far as the Polish frontiers, and joined the insurgents in Lithuania.

A few days after Bolinski's brigade of cavalry, which was fifteen thousand men strong, in the neighbourhood of Kaminiezki, followed their example. They marched off with their brigadier, and all their officers, traversed Jambol, Moldavia, the Austrian line, and Gallicia, without meeting with any obstacle, and effected a junction with General Kosciuzko near Crakow. The same conduct was also speedily adopted by Brazlaw's brigade, which was at Pikow. There now only remained a few men, with most of their officers: all the rest went by Polefse into Lithuania, and there was every reason to fear, the remainder of the Polish troops might be equally disposed to desert.

Soltikow had indeed distributed among them various Russian corps which were under his orders; but when the greater part of the Russians, under the command of Lieutenant-General Derfelden, marched into the interior of Poland, there remained no farther means of restraining these troops.

Towards the middle of the following May, Suworow received orders to proceed, by forced marches, into Red Russia, with a corps of fifteen thousand men, and to disarm all the Polish troops in that province ; Count Soltikow being ordered to do the same in that of Isiaslaw, to prevent their junction with the rest. Suworow's corps consisted of thirteen thousand men, and he was furnished with field pieces, besides those belonging to the regiments.

He now took measures to disarm and disband, as speedily as possible, all the Polish troops ; and for this purpose gave the following orders to the generals under his command.

1st. The commanding officers of the Russian troops, shall march at their head, to the stations pointed out, on the same day, viz. the 26th of May ; when they approach the Polish troops, they shall dispose themselves, that the former shall neither make their escape, nor receive succour.

2d. They shall immediately cause the Polish troops to be assembled in their quarters, muster them, and ask them, man by man, which of them chooses to remain in the service, or to quit it ; after which they shall persuade them peaceably to deliver up their arms ; and that others shall be distributed to those who are willing to remain in the service of Russia.

3d. It shall be declared, that the arrears of pay shall be discharged, as soon as the lists are made up.

4th. Passports shall be given to the soldiers, who shall demand their discharge, but as to the officers who wish to quit the service, a list of them shall be given to the general-in-chief, who shall communi-

cate it to the college of war, from which their passports shall be sent. In the mean while, provisional passports shall be given, to enable them to return home, on condition of not leaving their places of abode until they shall receive those of the college of war.

5th. Those who wish to continue in the Russian service, shall be incorporated in other regiments, and escorted to the place of their destination. The commanding officer of the escort, shall be commissioned to provide for their maintenance and security. To relieve the escort, it shall be recommended to those who are possessed of horses, to sell them; and carriages shall be hired to transport their baggage.

6th. As soon as the lists of men, who choose to continue in the service, and those who choose to be disbanded, are made up, they shall be sent to the commander-in-chief.

7th. The same questions shall be put to those, who, not having been born under the dominion of Russia, are in the Russian service; and those who choose to be discharged, shall be escorted to the place of their destination, till their passports are expedited at the college of war.

8th. In case of resistance, the greatest firmness must be employed. Those who give room to suspect them, shall be sent to Charkow, of which the commandant of the place shall be apprised.

9th. The commander-in-chief fully relies on the prudence and activity of the various commanding officers, and authorises them to modify or change, according to their judgment, the necessary dispositions, and recommends them to inform him, day

by day, of the execution of the present orders.

All the troops set forward, the same day, from different points. Suworow was at the head of the column that marched from Balta, towards Titeow. He had under his command General Schewitsch, the General Ilinief, and Brigadiers Lewaschow and Iseïow. His corps consisted of ten battalions, ten squadrons, and eight hundred Cossacs, with a company of artillery, and twelve pieces of cannon. Major General Lewaschow marched along the left bank of the Dniester, distributed the eight hundred Cossacs along the cordon, from Jaorlik to Mohilow, to cut off the retreat of the deserters, and with two battalions and six squadrons, disarmed six companies of Polish artillery at Thomaspol, and at Kremia, fifteen miles from Balta. Brigadier Stahl with two battalions and ten squadrons, marched to the right from Oliopol to Szmila, Czyrkas, Lisianka, and Bohuslaw, where he successively disarmed nearly one thousand men of cavalry and infantry, and one thousand five hundred in the latter place, who formed the brigade of Nestrow.

The factious party were desirous of assembling at Titeow, in order afterwards to retreat to Bialacereceu. This re-union, which was to take place two days later, was prevented by the speedy arrival of the Russians, as their leaders afterwards declared.

On approaching Titeow at day-break, Suworow sent forward General Ilinief into the city with ten squadrons, and followed him with the rest of the troops. Ilinief entered with his sabre in his hand, and made himself master of the principal guard. It consisted of one hundred men, who immediately

laid down their arms ; and the rest, who were at different posts, or distributed in the environs, amounting to one thousand men, surrendered within three days. The Russians treated the brigadier and other officers with friendly attention.

There had been detached, on the preceding evening, and there were sent, that very day, from Titeow, several divisions under the command of Schewitsch Polemanow, and Heilow, to disarm the Polish troops at Sokolowska, Ruschin, and Pohrobize. Colonel Count Elimpt remained at Titeow, with two battalions and a squadron to occupy that place and terminate this operation. Suworow marched the next day against Olodarka, where the brigade of Podoli was disarmed in the same manner as at Titeow. He staid there some days, waiting the return of the detachments, by which his corps was extremely weakened. In the mean while, all the reports of the officers under his command announced the complete success of the measure.

Leaving Colonel Prince Schakhoffskoi with two battalions, a few Cossacs, and all the field-artillery, at Olodarka, he marched eight miles farther with one thousand cavalry, who had joined him, to Bialacereceu, where was the brigade of Dnieperow, which was the most turbulent and at the greatest distance. It consisted of one thousand seven hundred men. Before he marched, he received advice, that they were inclined to fly. He therefore ordered the regiment of hussars, of Oleopol, to watch them, so that they were unable to escape ; and, in the space of two days, they were disarmed without resistance.

Thus were eight thousand men disarmed, within

a circuit of nearly one hundred and fifty miles, in less than a fortnight, without effusion of blood. Soon after, Count Joan Soltikow was equally successful in disarming the two brigades which had remained in the government of Isiaslaw. Some of the officers desired to be continued in the Russian service; but most of the soldiers, after receiving their pay, returned with passports to their homes.

When this measure was completed, Suworow distributed his troops in various places at Thomaspol, on the Dniester, at Czecznik, Titeow, and Bohuslaw, to maintain the public tranquillity, and to keep the provinces, newly conquered from the Turks, in subjection; the intentions of the Porte not being perfectly clear. The greater part of his corps posted itself under the walls of Niemerow, whither he went himself, after having settled every thing at Biala-Cereltew, where he caused many manœuvres to be performed.

Before he returned to Biala-Cereltew, he paid a visit to Field-Marshall Romanzow, at his estate of Taschan, near Kiow. Here Suworow wept as he embraced the grey-haired hero, under whose command he had so often fought, even at the time when he was lieutenant-colonel. He dined with him, and they did not separate till after a conversation of several hours relative to the peculiar situation of Poland and the general state of affairs.

## C H A P. XV.

FROM the time of the Polish insurrection at Cracow, and of the bloody battle of Warsaw, when the Russians, after a considerable loss of men, had retired to join the Prussians at Zakrorzim, various detachments of Russians had skirmished and engaged with the Polish insurgents at Cracow and Sandomir with alternate success. At Zakrorzim, the Russians and Prussians gained a great battle against Kosciuzko. Under the walls of Schelm, Lieutenant-General Derfelden gained an important victory over Saconschick, and took a great many prisoners with a part of his artillery. At Wilna the Poles had the advantage. Many parties of them advanced into Courland, the whole country was in a state of insurrection, and the high roads unsafe. The Prussians, commanded by the king in person, and the Russians, under Lieutenant-General Baron de Ferfen, were continuing the siege of Warsaw; and, as the troubles were spreading more and more, every thing seemed to indicate that the war would be prolonged for years.

Circumstances requiring more vigorous measures and more rapid operations, Suworow received orders to march with as many troops as he could collect, and to advance into the interior of Poland. In consequence of this he immediately sent the necessary orders to the various commanding officers of detachment. He appointed Warkowiz, on the new frontiers of Poland, as the rendezvous of all these corps; and, as prudence did not permit him to leave those provinces wholly without

troops, according to the plan of reform adopted, he left in cantonments eight battalions, ten squadrons, seven hundred Cossacs, and six field-pieces, under the orders of Lieutenant General Dunin, and General Lewaschow, and set out from Niemerow on the 14th of August, 1794. His whole corps then consisted of eight thousand men, under Generals Potemkin, Schewitsch, Ilinief, and brigadiers Polemanow, Stahl, and Ifeïow.

To rouse the courage of the soldiers to be present at every point where his presence might be necessary, and to afford an example to the officers, Suworow thought it his duty to divide with them the fatigues of the march. He performed it always on horseback, and till they arrived at Warsaw, he did not once enter a carriage.

On the eighth day his corps arrived at Warkowiz, forty two miles from Niemerow ; the rest, which had set out from various points, arrived there the following day. His corps halted there two days, partly to rest themselves after so long and rapid a march, partly to repair their baggage-waggons, and principally to bake a month's provision of bread, because from that place they would not meet with any magazines.

The corps arrived in six days at Kowel, which is eighteen miles from Warkowiz. Incessant rains had made the roads extremely bad, and rendered the fords of the rivers difficult to pass. Some Cossacs had, however, been sent forward to render the passage more practicable. At this time they received news of the siege of Warsaw being raised on account of the insurrection of South Prussia, whither the king was sending his troops. General

Fersen, who had separated himself from him, endeavoured to gain the right bank of the Vistula. General Burhawden made a junction with him at Kowel at the head of his corps, as did that of General Markow, which was posted four miles farther, forming together seven battalions and twenty-two squadrons, with eight field-pieces. Thus Suworow's corps amounted to twelve thousand men; one quarter of which were necessary to cover the baggage and supply the various detachments.

He now received advice that the Polish General Sirakowski was under the walls of Cobrin, and therefore immediately began his march, without beat of drum or sound of trumpet, ordering the soldiers not even to sing, but to preserve a profound silence.

The next morning at day-break the Cossacs of the vanguard met the first party of Poles, consisting of two hundred horse. An engagement ensued, and very few of the Poles escaped. The Russians took twenty-five prisoners, including an officer, and the rest were cut in pieces.

This affair took place near the small town of Divin; from the inhabitants of which the Russians learned, that, at Kobrin, four miles further, there were five hundred Polish infantry and cavalry. Some prisoners who were, at the same time, brought in, confirmed the fact, and added that this corps was Sirakowski's vanguard.

The generals were of opinion to temporize a little longer that they might procure more certain information; but Suworow, who is an enemy both to delays, which often prove dangerous, and to

detachments of patroles, which are more calculated to give information to the enemy than to discover them, determined to march directly against Kobrin, and only defcrred his departure a few hours to refresh the horses.

In the evening he went to the camp of Brigadier Iseïow's Cossacs, which was half a mile within the woods, where he had a conversation with him, and took a short repose on some straw before a fire.

The Cossacs to the number of eight hundred, set forward at midnight. Brigadier Stahl followed them with ten squadrons of horse chasseurs to support them ; the rest of the cavalry followed at some distance, and after them the infantry. Suworow's intention, in case of meeting with Sirakowski's corps under the walls of Kobrin, was immediately to charge them with pikes and sabres, without waiting for the arrival of the infantry.

He now went forward with Iseïow and a party of Cossacs from the Don, and arrived at night at an inn kept by some Jews within a mile of Kobrin. Here they dismounted, and made various inquiries relative to the news of the country, and the number and description of the troops at Kobrin. "It is said," replied the Jews, "that Sirakowski's corps consisting of 20,000, has marched from Brzescia, and are expected to-morrow. A party of cavalry and of infantry are already arrived on the other side of Kobrin." Thither Suworow resolved immediately to march, and attack them at day-break. He, therefore, immediately sent forward the Cossacs, who accordingly got sight of the

fires of the Polish camp, so as to be able nearly to appreciate their strength. The Cossacs soon met the advanced posts, who challenged them ; but, after the third call, and the first priming being scarcely burnt, the Cossacs fell on the Poles with so much fury that they scarcely knew where they were. The enemy had three hundred men cut in pieces, and lost sixty-five prisoners. About fifty men only escaped. By six o'clock the engagement was over ; and, at nine the infantry arrived.

Notwithstanding Suworow's desire to advance, he was obliged to stay at Kobrin, to make some indispensible repairs, and to wait the arrival of the bread and baggage waggons. He accordingly suffered his troops to take some rest. The next evening an officer of Cossacs took a Polish cavalier, who declared, " that Sirakowski had arrived within two miles of Kobrin, near Krupezize, with a body of sixteen thousand men, and that it was his intention to penetrate much farther ; that he expected indeed, to meet with the flying troops of General Burhawden and De Markow in the environs, but that he still imagined Suworow to be near Warkiowiz, and that he had only learnt his true march when he arrived at Krupezize."

The Russians passed that night on the look-out under Kobrin, having behind them their baggage covered by Cossacs, together with the regiment of Smolenski. At night a rumour prevailed that the enemy had attacked them, which appeared the more probable as the Poles were in great numbers at several points.

Suworow waited for their arrival ; but as they did not appear, he marched against them before break

of day to the distance of a mile, where he found a very advantageous position, which was calculated to draw them on. It was a plain with a gentle declivity. On one side of it ran a river, which the enemy must pass. His intention, therefore, was to suffer them to approach, and then to drive them into the river. In the mean time the army halted a few hours ; but, the Poles not appearing, Suworow determined to press them still closer. The Coffacs advanced, and here and there encountered Polish horse belonging to the advanced posts, with whom they skirmished. They brought in some prisoners, who said that Sirakowski had at first intended to attack the Russians, but that his corps occupying a very advantageous position behind the marshes, and being covered by five batteries, he determined to wait for their attack.

The whole corps, therefore, began to march, passed the little river of Muchavez, and at nine o'clock, was but half a mile from the enemy. The Coffacs repulsed the advanced posts as far as the village of Perki. The columns ranged themselves on a line ; the cavalry and infantry approached the points which Suworow had marked out for the attack, and the enemy's batteries began to play. The fire of the Russians soon silenced some Polish pieces of cannon which were mounted in a house in the front of the marsh. The first bombs thrown into this house set it on fire, and the enemy hastened to withdraw their cannon by a bad bridge which crossed the marsh.

A part of the Polish cavalry retreated to the right towards a very thick wood, as if to take the Russians in flank. To prevent this, Suworow detached

General Islinief with Pereiaslaw's regiment of chasseurs ; but he was unable to cross the marsh. The Polish cavalry returned to join this corps, and Islinief in like manner wheeled about.

A cannonade then began on both sides. The enemy imagined they could not be attacked while situated behind the marsh, which was two hundred paces broad, of considerable depth, and terminated on each side by small hills covered with wood. Suworow, however, gave orders for the attack. Immediately the infantry began to march in two columns, under the orders of Major-General Burhawden, and passed the marsh in spite of the greatest obstacles, and under the continual fire of the enemy. Nothing could stop the progress of the Russians, however great the difficulties they had to surmount. Some made use of beams and planks, which they took from some neighbouring huts, and which they laid on the marsh. Others proceeded by their own unassisted efforts. Of all the artillery they could only pass four pieces of cannon belonging to the regiments, which the soldiers carried on their shoulders. The rest were left behind under an escort. Three squadrons of hussars and the Cossacs passed at the same time with the infantry on either wing.

As soon as the troops had passed the marsh, which employed about an hour, they formed, ascended the little hill, and marched with loud cries against the enemy, who had now taken another position, and received them with a heavy discharge of case shot. The Russians only fired a few musket shot, and fell upon the Polish lines with the bayonet. Sirakowski's corps defended themselves with obstinacy, but,

notwithstanding the great superiority of his artillery, they were thrown into disorder, and lost a great number of men. Some of them fled to the convent of Krupezize, where they were pursued and cut to pieces ; while the poor monks, trembling for their own lives, implored the pity of the soldiers, and presented them the bible and the crucifix. Their lives were spared.

Sirakowski now began seriously to think of his retreat, he formed a square of three close columns, flanked it with cavalry, and retired by degrees.

During these transactions, four regiments of Russian cavalry arrived from the right wing, under the command of General Schewitsch. They had been obliged to make a circuit of three werfts through the woods, and had passed the marshes over rubbish, leading their horses in their hands. Istinief traversed the marsh over the bad bridge above mentioned, which was almost broken. Thus the cavalry of the two wings fell at once on the enemy's columns which were already in full retreat.

They now suffered a new loss of a considerable number of men. In vain did they make use of all possible exertions to use their numerous artillery, for the cavalry and infantry pressing them on every side obliged them to take refuge in the woods. It was now five o'clock, it was growing dark, and it was impossible to pursue them any farther.

The Polish corps who had been in this engagement consisted of twelve thousand infantry, three thousand five hundred cavalry, and about two thousand men armed with scythes. The use of this dreadful weapon was the invention of Kosciuzko.

It consisted of a sharp blade mounted like a scythe, and to which was added a pike a foot long at the end of a staff of ten feet.

The Poles left about three thousand men on the field, among whom were a great number of officers. Their General, Ruschize, was also killed; but very few prisoners were taken. The Russians lost a hundred and twenty-five men, and had two hundred wounded.

This victory was the more important, as it was the first battle fought with the Poles by the troops under Suworow; and as the enemy, notwithstanding the immense advantages of their position, the superiority of their numbers, and the strength of their artillery, were obliged to take to flight. It was the Russian infantry that contributed most to the success of the day; for they always attacked the enemy with the bayonet, and always repulsed them.

As soon as the fate of this battle began to be decided, Suworow had sent orders to Kobrin to send forward the baggage with the escort, and to dispatch with the utmost haste the provision carriages and the camp ovens. They arrived an hour after the battle. The men immediately dressed their victuals, and the corps went to keep guard before Janopol, three wersts from the convent of Krupezzie.

It is not easy to decide which is entitled to the greatest share of our praise, the extraordinary valour or uncommon vigour of the Russians. It was not three weeks since they had left Niemerow, in which short space of time, they had performed a march of eighty German miles, or a hundred and sixty French leagues. Some might be even inclined to doubt

the numerous records of this indefatigable activity, were they not so recent, and confirmed by the most indisputable authority.

---

## C H A P. XVI.

A LITTLE before midnight the whole corps was in motion to advance in pursuit of the enemy ; but all signals and cries of war were prohibited. They halted four miles from the place where they had been keeping watch, and rested four hours. The whole of the road was covered with dead horses, the Polish baggage having fled by that route ; but Sirakowski's corps had taken a much shorter, across the woods on the left of the Russians ; and he retreated with so much precipitation, that he arrived by ten o'clock the next morning at Brzescia.

From Bulkow, where the Russian corps had halted, it arrived in the evening at Teischin, which is three miles further, and a mile from Brzescia, where it encamped, in a bottom covered by small hills, on the banks of a small river. Here the soldiers dressed their viands in ditches, and with small fires, to avoid attracting the attention of the enemy, who often sent out patrols, but these did not come close enough, and they only perceived a party of Cossacs. The obscurity of the night enabled Lieutenant-Colonel Iwaschow, with an escort of about twenty Cossacs, to risk going on a reconnoitering party, near Bzrescia, in order more especially to discover the fordable parts of the Bug, as Suworow was

determined not to pursue the direct and beaten path.

Before Iwaschow returned, a Jew came in, who was very anxious to derive an advantage from the arrival of the Russians, at the expence of the Poles. This man communicated the rumours that prevailed in those parts, relative to the rapid march of Suworow, whom they expected speedily to arrive. He entreated the General to spare the people of his nation, domiciliated in that city, and offered to render the Russians all the services in his power. He assured them that Sirakowski, whose corps and whose horses were much fatigued, would as much as possible avoid coming to an engagement ; that he would begin to march the next day, in order to retreat to Warsaw, and that he had already sent forward his baggage in the dusk of the evening.

It would have been very difficult for the Russians to have pursued him, as they must have passed thick forests, and gone to a distance from Brzescia, which was in the centre of their operations, and resources for provisions ; while Sirakowski could procure every thing he wanted in the neighbourhood. Hence they would have been obliged, either to carry their provisions, and all their waggons with them, or to have left a strong detachment to guard them, besides which they would have been exposed to the attacks of numerous insurgents from Lithuania.

They questioned the Jew relative to the position of the enemy, the situation of the ground, and more especially the fords of the rivers Muchavez and Bug. The latter is fordable in three places, the farthest of which leads to the right, and is above half

a mile from the city ; and by this passage they might have attacked the enemy in the rear : but the banks of the river are there very steep, and the water up to the girths of the horses. The two other fords are to the left of Brzescia ; one of them is rather deep, but the bank is flat and commodious, and it was nearer to the enemy. At each of them the river is about two hundred paces broad.—Such was the information given by the Jew, who also offered to act as their guide.

Having thus procured all the necessary information, Suworow assembled his Generals in a small cottage, and communicated the plan of attack, concerting with them the correlative dispositions and orders.

At two in the morning the corps began to march in the greatest silence. It was divided in two columns. All the cavalry went to the right with the Coffacs, and the infantry to the left with two companies of grenadiers who were escorting the field artillery. The night was very dark ; yet they passed two fords of the river Muchavez, which indeed was not very deep, but of which the second sinuosity, being very marshy, was difficult to pass. This caused a short delay, and they did not arrive on the opposite bank till day-light.

They were still half a mile from the Bug, and before they arrived at it they heard the tocfin of all the convents and the bells of Brzescia, announcing their unexpected and dangerous approach. The terrified inhabitants now rushed in crowds into the churches, and implored the divine mercy on their knees. In the meanwhile the Rus-

fian corps advanced with redoubled activity, and, arriving at the river, crossed it without impediment, and hastened to form on the opposite bank. General Schewitsch had the command of twenty-five squadrons on the right flank. The General, *pro tempore*, Istinief commanded thirteen squadrons and the greater part of the Cossacs on the left flank; General Burhauden had the command of the infantry in the centre; and in the midst of these was all the field-artillery, consisting of fourteen pieces of cannon. Lieutenant-General Potemkin was at the head of the corps immediately under the orders of Suworow.

Sirakowski, as is now practised in the French tactics, had in his army a commissary named Horrien, who being fond of wine and of play, proposed some kind of game, and this amusement continuing till very late at night, delayed his departure two hours.

The Polish General being persuaded Suworow could only arrive at Brzescia by the direct road, had formed a battery of two pieces of cannon on the bridge over the Bug, with a strong battalion to defend that passage, and hence imagined himself perfectly secure in his position. But as soon as he perceived the Russians passing the Bug elsewhere, he hastily struck his camp, and taking a new position, put himself in battle array and appeared determined to wait with intrepidity for the attack.

Suworow ordered General Schewitsch to attack the left wing of the enemy with the cavalry of the right wing; and immediately the whole line began to advance. The Poles did not wait for their arrival, but suddenly formed into three close columns,

with their heavy artillery both in the van and in the rear. Each of these columns had nearly thirty men in front and an hundred in depth. They were sustained by divisions of cavalry, and began to retreat to the right in perfect order.

Islinief received orders to advance full gallop, with the squadrons of his left flank and the Collacs, against the columns, which he speedily reached. The ground was sandy, very uneven and intersected with ditches. Islinief charged the first column near a wood, where they had a ravin of considerable depth before them; at the extremity of which was a broken dyke. The hussars attacked the column on its flank, and the caribineers in front. The latter were received, on coming out of the ravin, with a discharge of case shot from four guns, and left many of their men and horses on the field. They returned however three times to the charge under the orders of Colonel Tekutief. At length they succeeded in breaking the column, great part of which was cut to pieces.

The cavalry of the right wing pursued the enemy and turned to their right. In the meanwhile the line of the infantry was constantly advancing, and four battalions of chasseurs followed the cavalry of the left wing, on the skirts of the wood, under the orders of General Burhawden. The two columns which had not been attacked, had made a manœuvre behind the former, and had removed behind the village of Koroschin, half a mile from their last position. They there occupied a very advantageous eminence, where the first column, which had been beaten, endeavoured to join them. The Polish General ranged his columns in battle array, and

seemed determined to stand firm, and wait the event of the battle. His new position was uncommonly excellent. His front was covered by the village, and his right wing by a thick wood, where he speedily raised a masked battery of eight heavy pieces of cannon which he supported by two battalions of chasseurs.

Being much too weak to attack the enemy in this position, Islinief was obliged to wait for a reinforcement. But as soon as the Polish General perceived the battalions of chasseurs come galloping towards him, he retreated. Two columns went to the right towards the wood with intention to traverse it, and the third took the left towards the same in order to cover the masked battery, which General Islinief threatened to carry.

The two first columns had already approached the wood, when Schewitsch, galloping on with twenty-four squadrons of carabineers, light horse and hussars, gained the interval, and immediately charged the front and flanks of the column which was nearest him. The Russians were received with a discharge of case shot and of musquetry, and experienced a rigorous resistance from the column, which defended itself in a desperate manner; for, of three thousand men, of whom it consisted, and a party of cavalry that supported it, there were very few who asked for quarters; almost the whole of them being cut to pieces in the ranks.

In the meanwhile the other column was engaged with a few squadrons, and as soon as the attack became general they experienced the same fate as the former. More of them, however, escaped, because this column had time to disperse, while the others

were defending themselves. But although they made the greatest possible efforts to save their artillery, as they had done at Krupezize, they lost six field pieces.

At the same time, the cavalry of the left wing approached the masked batteries in the woods, which they carried under a dreadful fire of case shot and musquetry. They then advanced, without losing a moment, against the column which threatened to attack them, and which was already annoying them with cannon. A very obstinate engagement now took place, but the Russians broke through them, the cavalry fighting with the utmost fury. Almost the whole column was defeated, and the greatest part of the cavalry who should have supported it, saved themselves by flight.

The four battalions received orders to cut off the retreat of the small remains of this column, to prevent their gaining the wood with their four pieces of cannon ; and as soon as their order was executed and the cannon taken, the battalions pursued the rest of the fugitives, who were also endeavouring to gain the wood. In this situation the enemy had no resource but to fly to the village of Dobrin in the road to Warsaw. Their cavalry soon followed their example, and endeavoured to save themselves by the bridge across the marsh beyond the village. But Istinief dispatched the Moripol light horse, with all the Cossacs, to prevent this manœuvre, and the four battalions of chasseurs flew thither so rapidly, that they arrived there almost as soon as the cavalry. They then began to cut the dyke and the bridge, of which they scattered the fragments ; and thus, with the exception of a few who passed before

their arrival, the remainder, not being able to engage in this deep marsh, were obliged to retire to the village.

Till this time the artillery had scarcely been employed, and every thing was decided by the sabre and the bayonet. The field pieces had even been left in the rear on account of the sands and ploughed lands, round which the troops were obliged to cross. The chasseurs, however, used the cannon of their battalion. Some field pieces, at length, arrived, with which they fired on the village, and drove out those who retreated thither. Thus the enemy were assailed on all sides at once, and those who refused to surrender were cut in pieces. A few hundred of the cavalry still endeavoured to fly across the marsh, but both they and their horses were drowned, or fell under the fire of the chasseurs from the side of the marsh.

The greater part of the Russian infantry did not engage in this action; after which, Suworow ordered Colonel Markow to return to Brzescia with two battalions, and to take the command of that city, as at Therespol.

This action terminated at two in the afternoon, when Suworow embraced the Generals, and thanked them for having so powerfully contributed to the victory. At this place they made a short halt, and the troops rested two hours. They might have advanced still farther; but learning from the prisoners they took, that very few Poles had escaped, the Russians returned, singing in unison with their martial music, and having the artillery and prisoners within a league of their van. Thus at seven o'clock they encamped at Therespol, nearly at the same place

Serakowski had occupied in the morning, and the very quarters, where that general supped the preceding evening, now accommodated Suworow.

A company of each battalion was left behind, to which were added about an hundred Cossacs. These troops scoured the woods, and defeated the enemy, who were dispersed there, or took them prisoners. Thus they passed two days till they had completely cleared the country.

At the same time, the provision carriages arrived, under an escort, from the other side of Therespol, together with the other baggage.

This battle, which lasted six hours, happened on the 8-19 September, 1794, and one of the most extraordinary victories that was ever obtained : for of all the enemy's troops which amounted to thirteen thousand men, viz. ten thousand infantry, three thousand horse, and four hundred scythe-men, three hundred, at most, escaped, with the five hundred prisoners. Sirakowski and Krasinski fled to Warsaw.

With the exception of four battalions of chasseurs, the cavalry alone were engaged. The artillery had been scarcely at all employed, and the whole was decided without fire-arms. All the enemy's artillery, consisting of twenty-eight pieces of cannon, chiefly brass, and of large calibre, were taken, as also two splendid flags, which had been sent them by the revolutionary council at Warsaw, and which were the only colours they had. That of the infantry was white, that of the cavalry, blue ; and each bore in letters of gold, the words LIBERTY, EQUALITY, INDEPENDENCE.

The corps of Russians, under arms, consisted of

eight thousand men, of whom four thousand and two hundred were infantry, three thousand cavalry, and about seven hundred and fifty Cossacs. They lost one hundred and fifty men, among whom were six officers; and one hundred and seventy wounded, of whom eleven were officers.

When the news of the defeat of Brzescia arrived at Warsaw, every one perceived, as we afterwards learned, that the Russian troops were commanded by the same General Suworow, who had before made war against the Turks, although, to avoid discouraging the Poles, it had been previously rumoured, that it was another General of the same name.

---

## C H A P. XVII.

THE Russians had not long been encamped at Brzescia when certain news was received that the corps of Lieutenant-General Derfelden was at Slonim. Suworow sent him orders to leave that place, and to attack Makranowski at Grodno, where he then was with a corps of regulars amounting to two thousand men, and four thousand armed with scythes. Prince Repnin as oldest General in chief, to whom Derfelden was subordinate, was apprised of this disposition, and approved it.

Twelve miles from Brzescia, and half way to Warsaw, was a corps of two thousand Poles near Selza commanded by Knœschevinsch, who had begun his march with a view to form a junction with Sirakowski from whom he had received orders, to

that effect, after the battle of Kupezize ; but he had not advanced many miles before he received the news of the defeat of Brzescia, and returned to Selza.

Kosciuzko, who was then at Warsaw, was informed of the fate of Sirakowski. He therefore set off in haste to confer with Knœchenvitsch, and commanded six thousand men to follow him, giving them orders to encamp near Loschiz, four miles from Selza, on the road to Warsaw. The troops of Knœchenvitsch received orders to join him, and these six thousand men took a very strong position under the command of Sirakowski.

The same day, Kosciuzko went to visit Makranowski at Grodno, and gave orders to all the divisions of troops of that canton to join him. They were divided under the command of Hedroitsch, who was marauding in Courland ; of Wawroschewski, who was posted on that frontier ; of Meyen, who was before Kowna, and of Willowurfski, Grabowski and Jasinski, who occupied Wilna. But the march of Derfelden, as will hereafter appear, prevented this union of the Poles from taking place. Kosciuzko only stopped four and twenty hours, and departed the next day for Warsaw.

After the siege of this place had been raised, Lieutenant-General Fersen had advanced three miles on the Vistula, where he passed some days, to cover the rear guard of the Prussian troops that were retiring. He afterwards advanced two miles higher as far as Gura, to pass the Vistula there, but found no boats. Thus he was obliged to go to Warca, where he with great difficulty procured some small

craft. This rendered the passage of the River Bielz very difficult, and he afterwards went to Kofiniza, which is four miles farther. There he halted, took the necessary measures for passing the river, secured boats for carrying over bread, and sent to buy anchors and cordage at Sawistof which is twenty miles higher up the river.

Agreeably to the positive orders of Kosciuzko, General Poninski occupied the right bank of the Vistula, opposite Fusen, to oppose his passage, and frequent cannonades took place on both sides with heavy artillery, but without doing much mischief. On the other hand, Fersen made various manœuvres to deceive the enemy, and to make them believe he intended to pass the river at Pulawa, six miles above the position of Kofiniza. But he remained there a fortnight till every thing was ready to effect his passage.

Kosciuzko had formed a plan to attack the Russian troops which Suworow commanded before Brzescia, at the head of the corps of Sirakowski, posted near Lochiz, which he was to reinforce. He proposed at the same time that Makranowski should attack them in the rear with a considerable body of troops, consisting of all the divisions of infantry dispersed over Lithuania.

Suworow's corps was now considerably diminished, and he was totally disabled from undertaking any enterprize on account of the number of prisoners and cannon which he had to guard. He resolved, therefore, to relieve himself from this embarrassment by removing them to Warkoviz under the escort of two companies of grenadiers, with an incomplete regiment of fusileers and four pieces of

cannon, five squadrons of light horse, and an hundred Cossacs, under the command of Brigadier Wladischin: a detachment from Kiowie had orders to meet them to relieve the escort from Wackoviz to Kiowie. The transport consisted of five hundred prisoners, twenty-four pieces of heavy artillery with caissons, six thousand muskets and two thousand pair of pistols. Of the artillery taken from the enemy, Suworow had given four six pounders to the brave Peroiaflaw's regiment of horse chasseurs, to remain with the regiment as flying artillery.

Shortly after the departure of Wladischin, a rumour prevailed at Brzescia of an engagement on the road, between his troops and the Poles, in which the latter had taken his artillery from him; but the origin of this report, as well as its falsehood, were soon discovered.

The necessity of providing for the subsistence of the Russians by contributing from the countries through which they passed required numerous detachments, as swarms of Poles infested that quarter. On the other hand, half the Cossacs were advanced on the road to Warsaw to procure information, and the rest were employed in foraging in the country. Hence, the effective number of Russians encamped before Brzescia were reduced to five thousand men.

Brzescia was not only the centre of all these operations, but it was also a rich granary, from which Warsaw was principally supplied with provisions. That capital had indeed found some resources at Lublin as long as the Polish troops occupied it, but now nothing could be expected from that district, nor from the neighbourhood of South

Prussia ; every thing having been consumed during the siege of Warsaw, or carried off by the Prussians and Russians in their retreat. In this district the insurgent army had levied great numbers of recruits. Each family was obliged to furnish a foot soldier, and every three families an horseman equipped and mounted. Such were the advantages of which the insurgents were deprived by Suworow's position near Brzescia. This consoled him for his being reduced almost to a state of inaction in this important post, where he remained four weeks till he could concert his final measures with Generals Derfelden and Fersen. The former received orders first to scour Lithuania, and afterwards to make a junction with Suworow. But the latter was still beyond the Vistula, where he was detained by the obstacles we have related. Yet, notwithstanding the arduous circumstances in which he was placed, General Suworow was determined to attack the first body that should press him too close, and to attack them one after another, in case they should present themselves in separate bodies to take him in the rear.

Suworow had the satisfaction to be informed by Prince Repnin that General Derfelden had advanced according to his orders from Slonim to Grodno ; and that Brigadier Diebow with his division of about a thousand men, had formed a junction with him from Pinsk to Brzescia. As to the Baron de Fersen, no news of him arrived, all communication being cut off, and the couriers sent to him taken prisoners. From time to time, indeed, some rumours were heard from travellers, but these could not be depended on, and were frequently contradictory.

Immediately after the taking of Wilna by the Russians, the Polish Colonel Grabowski retreated from that district, with two thousand men and eight field pieces, into the government of Minsk, which was a dependency of Russia. Major-General Knorring ordered about a thousand men to march against him, under the command of Prince Riziano. The revolutionary committee of Warsaw had ordered all the Polish commanders, who were nearest to the Russian frontiers, to enter the territories of the empire, in order to make that the seat of war. Grabowski had already advanced fifteen miles beyond the frontiers. He exacted contributions wherever he passed, had levied a thousand recruits of scythe-men, and endeavoured to excite the inhabitants to revolt. But this manœuvre was unsuccessful. Prince Ziziano overtook him, and found him encamped in an angle, surrounded with a very thick wood, having a marsh at the edge of the wood, and the river Abrutsch in his front. Ziziano found means to turn him, presented himself in front on the other side of the river, and immediately sent him a summons. The Colonel surrendered together with his troops, who were sent to Kiowie, and Ziziano returned to Grodno; from which place he sent a report of this event to Suworow.

The General had ordered Brigadier Iseïow to send forward some parties of Cossacs as soon as possible towards Warsaw. They went half way thither by single platoons, and one of these parties charged the advanced posts of a piquet of the enemy at Lukow, ten miles from Brzescia. The prisoners declared that the corps of Sirakowski and Knœschevitsch, to which they belonged, had depart-

ed three days before from Lofchiz, and that they were encamped six miles from Warsaw. The Cossacs animated by their success, were continually venturing to advance; and about an hundred of them attacked in the night a Polish Colonel, who was posted with an hundred fresh recruits in a castle at Selischze. This was the intrepid Colonel Wosurinski, who, although the peasants had apprised him of the approach of the Cossacs, would not desert his post. The Cossacs, finding the gates of the castle shut, raised them from the hinges with levers, and penetrated notwithstanding a vigorous resistance, into the court, where they fought above an hour, with sword and sabre. At length the Poles being almost entirely defeated, the Colonel with a few of his men, who remained took to flight, retreating through a postern gate, where he mounted his horse: but the Cossacs having, according to the custom of that nation, surrounded the castle, and perceiving their intentions, began to pursue them. The Colonel was on a very swift horse, and it was with great difficulty he was overtaken. He would not however ask for quarter, and died fighting bravely, under the pike of a Cossac. Not one of his little troop escaped.

Suworow's corps was now reinforced with a thousand men by the two regiments of Cossacs of Grekow and Kutenikow. These light troops from fifty to eighty men, often attacked in platoons, whole detachments of Poles consisting of several hundred men, and always with success. With one of these parties, which was reinforced with an hundred men, Major Popow attacked four hundred, beat, dispersed and drove them into the woods. He made a

considerable booty of uniforms at Sokowlow, where a revolutionary committee was established, and carried off the military chest, containing sixty thousand Polish florins. On his return he was suddenly attacked by two hundred horse, from whom he not only disengaged himself, but, having charged and dispersed them, he returned victorious into Brzescia with his booty and his prisoners.

In the neighbourhood of Selza the Cossacs took a courier, dispatched by Makranowski to Kosciuzko. The substance of the letter he carried was: "That " in conformity to the deliberations of Grodno, he " had assembled all the detachments dispersed over " Lithuania; that he had marched with them " against Bielsk, fifteen miles from Grodno, on the " road to Warsaw; and that he had posted a division, commanded by Wavroschewski, under the " walls of Plerka, on the frontiers of Prussia. He " added that some parties of Russians, which he " imagined belonged to Derfelden's corps, had appeared within two miles of him. He concluded " by asking Kosciuzko, as commander in chief, " for orders relative to the final operations." This letter was dated the 18th September, 1794.

At the time when this letter was on its way to Brzescia, Suworow received the report of General Derfelden, giving an account of his march from Slonim to Grodno, in conformity to his orders. During his march nothing worthy of remark happened, except frequently meeting with small parties of the enemy that had been repulsed or defeated. On his arrival at Grodno the vanguard of Valerian Zubow had taken a hundred new recruits prisoners. They had also found a few hundred measures of

flour and biscuit which had been distributed to the troops, as also a number of uniforms. Derfelden added, that he was waiting for the arrival of Ziziano at Grodno, where he proposed to leave him, and to proceed with his corps to Bialaceretu.

We left General Fersen under the walls of Korniza, from which place, communication not being secure, no news from him had yet arrived. At length on the 28th of September, the Austrian General Harnoncourt informed Suworow, that Baron de Fersen had sent him word by an officer, that he had thrown a bridge across the Vistula on the 25th of that month. A few days after, a Polish officer was brought prisoner to Suworow, and gave him the agreeable news of the defeat of Kosciuzko at Matsheviz, eight miles from Warsaw, and twenty from Brzescia, with all the particulars.

The following are the details taken from the report of this memorable action, which had so great an influence on the fate of Poland.

Kosciuzko, as we have already said, had concerted with Makranowski to attack Suworow's corps before Brzescia at the same time in the front and in the rear. He was therefore in momentary expectation of the arrival of Makranowski at Bielsk, where he was to have conference with him, relative to their final measures. He had chosen a position near Lukow, that he might be at hand to march against Brzescia, and at the same time attack Baron de Fersen, in case he should be able to cross the Vistula. Poninski had informed him that the smaller division of the Russian corps intended to effect a passage at Kosniza, and the greater at Pulawa; and the next

day he informed him that a part had already passed near Kosniza ; and Kosciuzko, having no reason to believe that this was the whole body, marched without delay against the village of Okrascha, which was about seven miles from the post he occupied. Besides of the 8,000 men of Sirakowski and Knœschewitsch, Kosciuzko had near 2,000 fresh recruits, which increased his corps to 10,000 men.

When he arrived at Okrascha he discovered his mistake, and to remedy it, immediately sent orders to Poninski to join him with the utmost haste ; for he perceived, he could not avoid coming to an engagement, as Poninskow had suffered himself to be deceived.

In fact, Baron de Fersen, perceiving that the enemy had fallen into the snare, relative to the manœuvre of a battalion of horse chasseurs towards Pulawa, and had marched thither ; immediately threw a bridge over the Vistula at the very spot he had before occupied. He had already sent forward two battalions of chasseurs on rafts supported by six squadrons of horse chasseurs and six regiments of Cossacs, who swam over the river, to scour the opposite bank, and form a tête-de-pont : but he was three days effecting his passage, on account of the baggage and artillery. The success of this manœuvre corresponded with the wisdom of his arrangements.

His first step was to reconnoitre the country : and Kosciuzko, who had in the meanwhile arrived, and whose camp was at the distance of a mile, removed in the course of the day three miles further

to Matscheviz, a very advantageous position, and where he intrenched himself.

Baron de Fersen having satisfied himself, that Poninski had not yet formed a junction with Kosciuzko, resolved to attack him the next day. He therefore dispatched General Denisow at dusk with four battalions, ten squadrons, and all the six regiments of Cossacs, together with eight pieces of cannon, by a by-road, half a mile long, through the woods and marshes, to attack the left flank of the enemy. Fersen himself began to march at midnight with the right wing divided into two columns, composed of fourteen battalions and thirty-three squadrons together with thirty-six field pieces, under the command of Major-Generals Kruschow, Donnasow, Rackmanow, and of Brigadier Bagreon, and immediately proceeded to Matscheviz.

He arrived at day break in front of the enemy's lines ; at the very moment when Denisow was beginning to engage, and immediately attacked the front of the lines with drums beating. His troops, animated, rather than fatigued, by a nocturnal march of great difficulty along marshy roads, by which the centre had been much incommoded, conducted themselves with their accustomed valour.

Kosciuzko, thus assailed and surrounded on all sides, defended himself with the greatest obstinacy till one o'clock, when no further hopes remained, and the fate of the battle was wholly decided. Six thousand Poles remained upon the field, and sixteen thousand men were made prisoners, among whom were Generals Sirakowski, Koscienski, Knœschevitsch, and nearly two hundred superior and staff officers. All their artillery also fell into the hands

of the Russians, and only fifteen hundred men, who traversed the woods of Warsaw, escaped. The Russians lost eight hundred men, and had fifteen hundred wounded.

Kosciuzko who commanded this body, and was also General in chief of the Polish insurrection, had exposed his person during the whole of the action ; but having at length made a desperate effort with the weak remains of his cavalry, he was obliged to save himself by flight. But although his horse was extremely swift, he was overtaken by Cornet Philipko of the Charkow light horse, a subaltern officer, and a few Cossacs. He had already received two wounds of a sabre, one in his neck, and the other in his head, when a Cossac called out to him to ask for mercy ; and being enraged at his not answering, wounded him in the back with his pike, which caused him to fall from his horse, in a state of insensibility ; and as they did not know him, he would infallibly have been killed, had not the Cossac been restrained by one of his officers, who told them he was the Commander in Chief ; upon which he was removed to a neighbouring convent. In his pocket they found a small loaded pistol, of which it was easy to guess the object ; but being senseless, he was unable to use it. He was attended with great care, and some time after removed, by Suworow's orders, to the house of General Romanzow, near Kiowie, he being the oldest commanding officer in the Russian army ; and afterwards to Petersburg.

The capture of a leader of so much importance was not the least precious of the trophies of the victory of Matscheviz, as will appear from the im-

pression his loss made on the Poles. But before we describe the particulars, it will be proper to give a short sketch of that General's life.

Kosciuzko was a gentleman of small fortune in the environs of Brzescia. His father left him a patrimony of only a few peasants, that is to say, but a small landed estate. He was educated at Warsaw in the Royal Academy of Cadets, and made a very rapid progress, especially in the art of engineering. After passing eight years at this school, he served in the army as an officer. He then went to America, where he obtained a commission under General Washington, and rose to the rank of Lieutenant Colonel of light infantry. He continued in America till the end of the war, and distinguished himself on various occasions by his bravery and talents.

When the new constitution of the third of May 1791 was published in Poland, he returned to his country. He successively visited Warsaw, Galicia, and other parts. And the Poles having resolved to oppose the Russian army that had penetrated into their country, he was appointed Major-General, and placed at the head of the advanced guard under the orders of Prince Joseph Poniatowski, Commander in Chief of the whole army. He was present at the battles of Silenzi, Tibienka, and Lublin, against the Russians, in all which he distinguished himself. Soon after these events, peace was restored. On the arrival of Cakowski, he was at Warsaw, from thence he went by Sandomir to the foot of the mountains to visit the Princess Czartorinska, who assisted him with her purse. Here, applying to the circumstances of the times those principles

of liberty which he had learned in America, he began seriously to employ his mind on the revolution, which he propagated by his correspondence, both in Poland and Lithuania ; and the flame of insurrection, lighted up by his means, soon began to extend itself in every part of the kingdom.

In the spring, he went by Moldavia to Constantinople, where the ministry of the Porte received him with respect. His object, however, which was to produce a rupture between that Court and Russia, was suspected and frustrated by several foreign ministers, residing there. Perceiving, therefore, that his project would prove abortive, he quitted Constantinople and went to France ; where he contemplated the storms of the revolution, during his residence at the capital, which he quitted on the approach of winter to return to the Princess Czartorinska. From that time he began to take large strides towards producing a revolution, which broke out in March, at Crakow, under the direction of Madelinski ; and in April, at Warsaw, under the conduct of Makranowski. Hence it was that the last city fell a victim to those calamities which are inseparable from violent, popular commotions. Kosciuzko, after having visited Crakow, to administer the oath of fidelity to the insurgents, came to Warsaw, where he played a conspicuous part ; in which he evinced a degree of bravery and skill, that continued to the last. But even these great qualities, being employed in an unequal contest, hastened both his own ruin and that of his country.

Not only the troops were in great consternation, at the loss of their commander, but discouragement and affliction spread themselves throughout Warsaw,

where the zealous partizans of the new constitution anticipated its approaching fall. The revolutionary committee appointed, in his place, Major-General Wavroschewski, although Makranowski and others were his seniors in command; and this general was immediately sent for to Warsaw, where the oath having been administered to him in full council, he took possession of his new command. Wavroschewski had been a week before the walls of Bielsk, when he received the news of Kosciuzko's defeat. Derfelden was six miles from him, before Bialaceretu. Makranowski, uneasy at being so near him and fearing an attack on the side towards Brzescia, retreated to Warsaw.

Suworow no sooner heard the news of the victory of Matscheviz, than he took measures to form a junction with Derfelden and Fersen, and immediately sent them the necessary orders to that effect. Derfelden was to march from Bialaceretu, and taking the road to Bielsk and Grodno on the Bug, ten miles from his former position, to engage the enemy, should he meet him; after which he was to pass that river, and to march to Pragua (or Pragua) which is a suburb of Warsaw, where General Suworow would make a junction with him. On the other hand, Fersen had received orders to go to Pragua by Selkow, Parczow, and Minzki, where all the corps were to meet.

The escort under the command of Wladischin, which had brought the artillery and prisoners to Klowie, was now returned, and Suworow assembled around him all the detachment employed in procuring provisions and forage. Thus this corps now amounted to near ten thousand men, from which

however, must be deducted two thousand, who remained behind, at Bzrescia, under Brigadier Dibow, to cover the baggage. He had therefore about seven thousand men under arms, with whom he set out towards Warsaw at dusk, on 7-16 October, 1794.

---

## CHAP. XVIII.

GENERAL Derfelden, in conformity to the orders he had received, marched immediately from Bilaceretu to Bielsk, and then to Branisk, from which place he sent a report, announcing that the enemy were retiring towards the frontiers of Russia, and that he was harrassing them in their retreat. A few days after, he wrote that the vanguard commanded by Valerian Zubow had overtaken and defeated their rear guard, consisting of about five hundred men, who were almost all cut in pieces or taken prisoners.

Makranowski now hastened towards the Bug. He had sent a considerable detachment before him to throw a bridge over it at the village of Popkow, but the last column, which consisted of about three thousand men, before they could effect their passage near Hedroitsch, was overtaken by Derfelden's rear guard. This column exerted itself to avoid an engagement, and having lost a few hundred men, in a very short time passed the bridge. The Poles fired a few cannon shot at them, and Count Zubow was wounded in the foot.

Derfelden received advice, that ten miles further

the Polish General Grabowski was hovering about the environs of Zakrocbyn, behind Narew, with a thousand men, whom he had collected together. He therefore sent Colonel Anarep upon the scout, with six squadrons and a few chasseurs, who soon met them, killed about an hundred of them, and having taken about a hundred prisoners, dispersed the rest.

In the mean time Suworow's corps had arrived at the small town of Janova, from which he sent about an hundred Cossacs, in two detachments, to scour the country. At first he intended to have attacked Makranowski over against Bielsk, twenty miles from Janova; but having learned that he had left that place, he determined to cut off his road to Warsaw, by approaching nearer to him. He therefore advanced three miles further towards Tolkow, where he was informed a body of the enemy were posted, amounting to some thousand men, before Stanislavow, where they might receive reinforcements from Warsaw, which was but four miles from that place. He accordingly gave orders to Baron Fersen to direct his march from Minsk towards Stanislavow, so as to arrive there at day-break on the thirteenth of September; informing him also, that he would himself be there at the same time.

A dispatch from Fersen acquainted him, that he had departed from Korytnica on the 10th of September, and as it was impossible for him to arrive before Stanislavow on the day appointed, he was, therefore, informed that the rendezvous was postponed one day.

Some of the prisoners brought in by the Cossacs

gave information, that Makranowski was already in the neighbourhood ; that he would arrive the following night ; and was to take the road to Warsaw. Orders were therefore immediately dispatched to Fersen to make an attack alone with his corps before Stanislavow, because the enemy were not strong there, and Suworow proposed to wait the arrival of Makranowski at Wengrow. The event however did not turn out as we expected. The enemy did not appear, and Suworow impeded by a narrow sandy road, did not arrive till the 14th at Stanislavow, where Fersen had arrived the preceding evening, without having met the enemy in his road. Thus it was that the junction of the two troops took place. That of Fersen consisted of above ten thousand men under arms, and the whole corps under the command of Suworow now amounted to seventeen thousand men.

The two thousand Poles, who occupied Stanislavow, had retired to Okonief, three miles from Warsaw. Fersen, who was to the left of Suworow's corps, was therefore ordered to attack them, and the General marched with the right wing within four miles of that place to Kobylka, where also was a party of Poles. As these troops were near Warsaw, whence they could easily draw succours, the General preferred acting with his own corps to sending a detachment. He also expected in the road to meet Makranowski, whose route from the Bug to Warsaw naturally lay by Kobylka. In order to divide his forces equally, he took fifteen hundred horse of Fersen's corps, namely ten squadrons of Smolenski dragoons and six squadrons of Charkow and Ach-

tirk light-horse. On the approach of night the two corps, thus divided, respectively began to march in the most perfect silence.

Suworow's corps halted half way to attack the enemy at day break. Brigadier Iseïow first advanced with eight hundred Cossacs, and was supported by ten squadrons of Pereïäslaw horse chasseurs. The latter however marched so rapidly, that they had soon advanced a quarter of a mile beyond the column.

Some peasants taken by the Cossacs reported, that a considerable party had that very night formed a junction with the enemy, Iseïow therefore immediately sent to Suworow to know if he was to wait for a reinforcement, to which that General replied by orders to advance.

The Russians, having passed a thick wood, came to a muddy pond, which was a few hundred paces across, and from which they extricated themselves with great difficulty, as their march raised the mud, and it became more impassable in proportion as they advanced.

In the meanwhile the Cossacs and the chasseurs arrived in front of the enemy and formed. The latter were much more numerous than was expected, being ranged in two lines, with their infantry in the centre, the cavalry on both wings, and their front covered on either side by chasseurs concealed in the wood, together with some pieces of cannon. They were posted in a plain, which was a quarter of a mile across, surrounded with woods, and with several roads in their rear.

Notwithstanding the superiority of their numbers, the Cossacs and chasseurs fell full gallop on the two wings. They were received with a heavy discharge

of case shot and musketry, and their flanks in particular were annoyed by some pieces of cannon which were concealed in the woods. After an active resistance of half a quarter of an hour, the enemy's flanks were beat in; but the infantry, who were in the centre, were not broken, and retreated in perfect order, and the wings wheeled round and formed into close columns. The chasseurs, who were in ambuscade in the wood, then also retreated with their cannon; but most of them were cut to pieces by Brigadier Stahl, who commanded the Pereiaslaw horse chasseurs.

From the beginning of the engagement, Suworow, perceiving the enemy were superior in numbers, sent orders to the cavalry, who were filing off in his rear into the wood, to accelerate their march. Upon this, the regiments immediately advancing with the utmost eagerness, the whole cavalry arrived at the very moment the first engagement had concluded.

The enemy, who were retiring in three close columns along the roads that led to the woods, being partly supported by their cavalry, were attacked on all sides by the cavalry of the Russians, and by the dragoons, the greater part of whom were ordered to dismount.

The first column, which consisted of about a thousand men, marched to the right at a distance of almost a quarter of a mile from the second; and the General, *pro tempore*, Ilinief pursued them with ten squadrons of dragoons and light horse, and a battalion of chasseurs. Notwithstanding a very quick fire of artillery and of musketry, he came up with them on a small plain, killed two hundred men, took thirty prisoners, and two pieces of cannon.

and dispersed the rest of the column in the woods. Thus, leaving a part of his troops, he returned with the rest to the plain, where the action had commenced, and there found Suworow, who ordered him immediately to return into the wood, because, according to the report of some dragoons, the Poles who had been dispersed, were assembled, Iislnief taking with him six small squadrons of dragoons of reserve, surrounded and attacked on all sides the remainder of this column, who laid down their arms, and sued for quarter. Among the prisoners, of whom they took three hundred and eighty, were Colonel Boland and twenty-four superior and staff officers.

On arriving in the plain where they had before formed in a column, these prisoners requested the General to give them some refreshment; because they had been marching during several days, and had eaten very little. He ordered them whatever was to be had, and Brigadier Stahl, who had made the first attack with the chasseurs on horseback, and who was resting, together with his squadron at the same place, ordered his officers to make a short halt, when the Russian soldiers divided their small portions of provisions with the same Poles they had just been fighting.

The squadrons and battalions of chasseurs, forming together thirteen hundred men, who had attacked this column, assembled and ranged themselves on this plain, leaving only a party of Cossacs behind to scour the woods.

The second column of the enemy, which was weaker than the first, and, like that, without cavalry, was pursued by a regiment of hussars and three squa-

drons of carabineers, under the orders of Brigadiers Barafkoi and Polemanow. The General also sent after them, a battalion of chasseurs and four squadrons of dismounted dragoons. These pursued the column into the woods; but as the enemy took a very narrow road, and the wood was very thick on both fides, the Russians could not break it. At length, the enemy succeeded in disengaging themselves from their pursuers, and in joining the third column of the left.

This column was about three thousand men strong, and took the great road to Warsaw, which is very broad. Nine squadrons, two battalions, and about four hundred Cossacs, under the orders of Potemkin and Schevitsch, were sent in pursuit of them. The cavalry made a circuit, and suddenly attacked the rear guard on a small plain. The latter were supported by a hundred and fifty horse, who were cut in pieces. The infantry afterwards attacked them and broke the lines; and, after a full quarter of an hour's resistance, the column took to flight, leaving about five hundred men upon the field.

Potemkin had demanded a reinforcement of the General, *pro tempore*, Illinief, who, after beating the first column, sent him five squadrons of light horse. Potemkin also took the precaution of detaching three squadrons of carabineers, with almost all the Cossacs, to scour the woods to the left, and to cut off the road along which the column was proceeding. While the second was joining the third, Potemkin was rejoined by the squadrons of Polemanow and Barafkoi, and both of them pursued their march in the same direction.

The carabineers and detached Cossacs discharged

their commission in the best manner possible. Accordingly, the column, marching along a height, did not see these squadrons till they suddenly appeared before them; while the others were on the point of attacking them in the rear. A brisk fire now commenced from the column on both sides, but the battalions of Russian chasseurs, instead of amusing themselves with the fire, fell on them with the bayonet; at the same time the five squadrons of light horse, who could not penetrate any further across the wood, dismounted and fell on the enemy with their sabres. On the other hand, the Cossacs and carabineers did the same. The Poles defended themselves bravely, and would not ask for quarter. The battle continued near an hour, and they were almost all cut in pieces. Only four hundred prisoners were taken, among whom were thirty superior and staff officers, together with Bicheffski, Adjutant-General of the King, who was severely wounded in the shoulder. Colonel Ratischeffski and Olscheffski were killed.

They took all the artillery of the Poles, consisting of nine pieces of cannon, and a large revolutionary flag, being the only one they had with them; and as none of these troops escaped, the fate of this corps, which consisted of about five thousand men, was not known at Warsaw for a considerable time. The loss of the Russians was very inconsiderable.

While they were approaching the enemy, and a little before the action commenced, they perceived a numerous train of Polish waggons, under a weak escort, and the General detached against them one hundred Cossacs and two squadrons of carabineers to support them. But before these arrived, the Cossacs were masters of the convoy; for the fifty

men, who were escorting it, threw down their arms and surrendered. In the waggons they found bread, oats, and uniforms.

General Mayen, who commanded the corps which formed the first column of Makrawnowski's army, was lodged in a castle near the place where the troops were assembled. But he no sooner heard the report of cannon, than he fled to Warsaw, and the twenty or thirty Coffacs, sent after him, were unable to come up with him.

The infantry had not been employed, because they could not come up in time, on account of the narrowness of the road, and of the marshy ground, which had been rendered still more impassable by the cavalry.

The Coffacs, not contented with seeing the country scoured, dispatched some parties of them across the woods as far as the intrenchments of Prague, two miles from Kobylka, where they threw every one into the greatest alarm; as it was imagined the Russian troops were following them.

One of these parties of Coffacs reported, that a considerable body of Poles were under march. Upon this, Suworow immediately sent messengers to hasten the march of his infantry, which was in the rear. It was the corps of General Gorinski, consisting of seven thousand men, who belonged to Makranowski, and whose intention was to go to Kobylka, but as he heard the cannon echoing through the woods, he had no favourable idea of the event, and returned directly to Warsaw.

When this action, which had continued four hours, was terminated, all the troops assembled under Kobylka, where the camp was pitched. The lord of

this little town, was a venerable old man, Count Unrhue, who had lately arrived there, having had the greatest difficulty to obtain a passport from the revolutionary committee at Warsaw, where he had been arrested, at the commencement of the revolution. The Cossacs who were detached, during the engagement, to take possession of Kobyłka, mistook this personage for a General, because he wore a blue ribbon, and secured him as an important prisoner. His castle now served for the head quarters, and he received Suworow with open arms, at the same time congratulating him on his victory, and felicitating himself on thus recovering from his alarm. Suworow invited him to dinner, together with the Generals and other officers, his prisoners, among whom was Bischeffski, although much incommoded by his wound. But his liberty was soon restored through respect to the King of Poland.

Fersen, who with his corps had marched against Okenies, did not find the enemy there. Having rested therefore a short time, he came in haste with a party of cavalry to join General Potemkin, but when he arrived all was over. He afterwards joined General Suworow and encamped on his left.

Derfelden arrived shortly after him, and encamped on his right. After scouring the country, he had stopped some days at Grodno, to procure provisions and bake bread, and had directed his march by Sokolow and Stanislavow. His corps consisted of eleven battalions, fourteen squadrons, and three regiments of Cossacs, amounting together to five thousand men, and was furnished with twenty four field-pieces. The whole army under Suworow now amounted to twenty-two thousand men.

The next day after his arrival at Kobylka, he began his preparations for making a vigorous attack on Prague. He caused a quantity of fascines to be made in the woods, as also ladders, and hurdles to cover the wells, and the troops were exercised in various evolutions and manœuvres of assault. To relieve himself from the guard and subsistence of the Polish prisoners, who amounted to eighteen hundred men, they were conducted under a good escort, together with the artillery, to the frontiers of Russia.

In the meanwhile Makranowski had arrived at Prague, before Warsaw. His corps consisted of twenty thousand men, of whom five thousand were cavalry and a few thousand scythe-men, together with forty-eight pieces of cannon, after having passed the Bug, had marched in three columns. The first and strongest, which he commanded in person, had passed the river near Suchozin, under the fire of the Prussian batteries, without being detained upon their route: the second, under Gorzinski, had marched directly in the centre; and the third, under the command of Mayen, marching a mile to the left of the direct road, had been entirely defeated under Kobylka.

Makranowski had written, during his march, to the revolutionary committee at Warsaw, that he was tired of his situation, and was desirous of retiring. They requested him, however, to continue the command till the troops arrived at Warsaw. He was no sooner there than he resigned, and lived as a private individual.

## CHAP. XIX.

WHILE the Russian troops, encamped under the walls of Kobylka, were employed in making the principal preparations for the assault, General Suworow was meditating the plan of operations. On the third day of his residence at Kobylka he went to reconnoitre the intrenchments of Prague with his generals and several officers. They were supported by ten squadrons of Pereiaslaw horse chasseurs, six squadrons of Oleopol hussars, and a few hundred Cossacs.

They were received with a dreadful cannonade from various batteries in the intrenchments, and the General, *pro tempore*, Illinief had a horse killed under him.

The escort attacked the chain of pickets of the enemy at various points, drove them into the intrenchments and killed about fifty men. The Poles dared not risk a sally to oppose this reconnoitering, which was peaceably performed, and, after having employed some hours in examining the most essential objects, the generals returned to their camp, with their suite and their escort, without suffering the smallest loss.

Major Bischeffski, brother of the King's Adjutant-General, came to the camp in the King's name, to ask permission to carry the wounded Adjutant to Warsaw to be properly attended. To this Suworow consented without hesitation, requesting the officer to present his homages to the King, and the next day the two brothers returned to Warsaw with an escort.

Another Polish officer came the same day to the camp. This was Major Muller, whom the revolutionary committee had sent, together with a physician, to take care of Kosciuzko. But this was refused, because that General was already at a great distance, and the roads not being safe, this request could not be granted without adding a considerable escort, which circumstances would not permit. It was also observed that the General was already under the care of a skilful man, and that he had all the assistance he could desire.

The officer, who was charged with this proposition was accompanied by a second physician, formerly a prisoner at Warsaw, who had been set at liberty, and who was sent to attend Count Valerian Zubow, having been previously attached to him. This generous offer was accepted with gratitude.

General Suworow received Major Muller with the greatest politeness. He kept him to dinner, and having formed a favourable opinion of him, or, perhaps, wishing coolly to overawe his enemy by the appearance of his troops, permitted him to see them at his ease in their camp, and ordered a subaltern officer to accompany him. Muller was not a little surprised at the prodigious activity of the Russians, and the immense preparations they had already made for the assault. At his return, Suworow told him he was concerned at seeing the Poles running into the jaws of destruction, by a resistance which was equally obstinate and fruitless, while it was in their power to preserve their liberty by accepting the amnesty; and that if they persisted in defending themselves, they would all be put to the sword.

The Polish General in Chief, Zeionschik, who succeeded Makranowski, had given Muller, as he passed, a letter to Suworow, relative to the sending back Kosciuzko's effects. But his demand was made in so high and uncivil a manner, that the General thought proper to make him feel the impropriety of it by a vigorous answer in the following terms.

“ The mad leaders of the revolt expect to  
“ bravado Russia by base atrocities. Zeionschik  
“ dreams that his new post excuses him from the  
“ rules of politeness. Count Suworow-Rymniski  
“ returns him his Jacobin scribble. Here we  
“ want no equality or frenetic liberty. No trumpet  
“ will be received, unless it comes in the name of  
“ sincere repentance, and imploring oblivion for  
“ the past.

“ C. S. R.”

Major Muller returned the next day to Warsaw, and carried back this reply. But in lieu of keeping it to himself, Zeionschik read it to the revolutionary committee, where it made a lively impression, and where several members of this assembly perceived in this rigorous answer, the fate that threatened their ephemeral power; a presentiment which was speedily realized.

All the necessary measures were now taken, and the preparations for the assault of Prague completed. General Suworow extended and approved the plan of attack, of which many of the particulars had been concerted in the council of war. These he communicated to all the commanding officers of regiments, battalions, squadrons and companies, and thus every thing was ready for the assault.

The General had ordered that no one should shew himself towards Prague, except those who went to reconnoitre ; nor was it allowed to send thither any patroles without his orders. According to the information he had received, he knew pretty well the strength of the garrison of that suburb, and of the intrenched camp, which defended the entrance of it. These intrenchments were stronger than those of Warsaw, and sufficiently extensive to serve as a field of battle. The garrison consisted of thirty thousand men. The plan of assault contained sixteen articles, which were to the following effect.

I. The army shall march from Kobylka against Prague in three columns by three different roads, on the 22d of February at five o'clock in the morning, and shall encamp in a circle round Prague.

II. The right wing shall be commanded by Derfelden, the centre by Lieutenant-General Potemkin, and the left wing by Lieutenant-General Baron de Ferfen.

III. On the following night, when the army shall have pitched their camp, batteries shall be erected in front of each corps, and play throughout the day on the enemy's batteries, which shall be annoyed as much as possible. The object of these batteries is to deceive the enemy, by making them believe we mean to commence a regular siege, and to give the generals and commanding officers of columns time again to reconnoitre, under protection of the cannon, the points of rendezvous for the columns and the points of attack.

IV. In the night between the 23d and 24th the army shall be arranged in seven columns. Four

shall march to the right, two in the middle towards the left, and one in the left wing to the banks of the Vistula.

V. Each column shall be preceded by one hundred and twenty-eight arquebusiers and two hundred and seventy-two pioneers. The former shall be commissioned to carry the enemy's advanced posts without firing, to defend the pioneers, and to draw the enemy on to the ramparts, while the approaches are making. The pioneers shall clear the roads from rubbish, and carry the fascines, hurdles and ladders. Besides these pioneers, each battalion shall be accompanied by thirty labourers furnished with implements of intrenchment.

VI. As soon as the the first column of the right wing shall have forced the enemy's intrenchments with the bayonet they shall cut off their communication and their retreat over the bridge.

VII. As soon as the second and third column shall have taken the works, and batteries they shall range themselves in order of battle in the great square.

VIII. The fourth column, after surmounting every obstacle, and taking the two cavaliers, shall immediately seize the park of artillery.

IX. The three last columns shall make their attack half an hour later, to give time to the enemy, who are known to be more numerous towards their right, to carry their strength to the other side, and thus to assure the success of the manœuvre.

The seventh column are particularly ordered to march to the assault, directing their course against the island in the small river, and to send, if possible, a detachment to the left, towards the bank of the

Vistula, to assist the first column to cut off the retreat of the enemy by the bridge.

X. As soon as the columns shall have pierced through the enemy and formed, they shall immediately fall upon the enemy with the sabre and bayonet.

XI. The bodies of reserve of each column, composed of two battalions and two squadrons, together with those who conduct the flying artillery of the columns, shall march at a distance of one hundred and fifty paces behind each column, shall immediately form on the parapet of the first intrenchment, and shall by means of the pioneers clear the road as much as possible for the cavalry.

XII. As soon as all the columns shall have carried the second intrenchment, they shall clear the streets of Prague, and overthrow the enemy with the bayonet, without stopping for trifles, or entering into the houses, and then the bodies of reserve shall occupy the second intrenchment in the same order and with the same object, as is above pointed out.

XIII. At the same time all the field artillery, consisting of eighty-six pieces of cannon, shall occupy the outermost intrenchment, and shall be supported by one third of the cavalry; and the remaining two-thirds shall keep on the two wings, observing a proper distance.

XIV. The Cossacs shall remain in the place assigned them behind the columns. Those who shall be between the fourth and fifth columns at the beginning of the assault, shall approach the intrenchment crying out Hurra! and those who shall be

posted on the banks of the Vistula, shall keep their post, forming a semicircle.

XV. The troops must act with the greatest energy against those who are under arms, but shall spare inhabitants, unarmed persons, and those who shall ask for quarters.

XVI. As soon as the business shall be terminated, a proper ground shall be sought, for erecting batteries, where the field artillery shall be placed, and the troops shall immediately begin a brisk cannonade on Warsaw.

Accordingly the army began to march, at the appointed hour on the 22d October, from the camp of Kobylka, in three bodies, against Prague, two miles from the place from which they set out. The troops marched with drums beating and colours flying, they arrived at ten o'clock in the morning at the appointed posts, and ranged themselves round Prague beyond the reach of the cannon.

At their approach the enemy's advanced posts remained at their stations, but the Russians attacked them with the bayonet. This excited an alarm in the middle of their intrenchments, which was heard at a great distance.

The troops encamped, and the Generals, having made all the arrangements relative to the good order of the camp, mounted their horses in the afternoon to reconnoitre. General Suworow inspected the whole camp in the evening and passed the night there.

Towards midnight batteries were speedily erected in front of the three corps. On these two thousand men were set to work, supported by six battalions, and by five in the morning the batteries were finish-

ed. There was one of twenty-two pieces of cannon on the right wing, one of sixteen in the centre, and one of forty-eight on the left wing.

At break of day the Russians began to use all their artillery, and were answered from the intrenchment, by a very brisk fire, which however annoyed them but little. The agitation among the enemy on seeing these batteries so speedily erected, and of which there was not the smallest appearance the preceding evening, was very great.

The generals, commanders of columns, and several other officers again mounted their horses to reconnoitre, and attentively examined the points where the columns were to assemble and attack. These various places were pointed out by Lieutenant-Colonel Iwaschow and quarter-master Gluckow of the engineers. The enemy exerted themselves to the utmost to prevent this operation, kept up a very brisk fire from their mortars, and sent out some rifle-men, against whom were dispatched two battalions who repulsed them.

Suworow also went to reconnoitre with some persons of his suite, and made several additions to the plan of assault. Till the very moment when it was to begin, he passed the night at Belalenka, a small village about a musket shot behind the camp.

At three in the morning the troops began to march in seven columns. The first and second were led by Lieutenant-General Derfelden, under whom Major-General Lasci commanded the first, and Colonel Prince Laborow Rastowski the second.

Lieutenant-General Potemkin led the second, and under his orders Major-General Ilinief and

Burhawden commanded the third and fourth columns. The three columns of the right wing were led by Lieutenant-General Baron de Fersen, under whom were Major-Generals Tormasaw, Rachmanou and Denizow. All the cavalry were under the orders of Major-General Schwitsch, and commanded by Brigadiers Polewanow, Barawskoi, Stahl, and Saburow. Its business was to support the field artillery and defend the columns on each wing.

The first column consisted of two battalions of Livonian chasseurs, and three battalions of Fanagor grenadiers; and the body of reserve, of the Tuli regiment of musketeers, and three squadrons of Kio-wie horse chasseurs.

The second column consisted of two battalions of Bieloruss chasseurs, the Abscherow regiment of musqueteers and a battalion of musqueteers from Nisow; the body of reserve, of the second battalion of Nisow musketeers and five squadrons of Kinburn dragoons who served on foot.

The third column consisted of two battalions of Livonian chasseurs, and four battalions of Cherson grenadiers; and the body of reserve, of a battalion of Smolenski musketeers, five squadrons of Smolenski dismounted dragoons, and three squadrons of Pereiaslaw horse chasseurs.

The fourth column consisted of the third battalion of Bieloruss chasseurs, the fourth battalion of the corps of Livonian chasseurs, and the regiment of Af-sfew musketeers; and the body of reserve, of the Naebski regiment of musketeers, the five other squadrons of dismounted Smolenski dragoons, and three squadrons of Oleopol hussars.

The fifth column consisted of the first battalion of

Catherinoslaw chasseurs, the Kurski regiment of musqueteers, and a battalion of grenadiers, formed of different companies; and the body of reserve, of another battalion of the same, a battalion of Nowogorod musketeers, and three squadrons of Elizabethgrad horse chasseurs.

The sixth column consisted of a battalion of Catherinoslaw horse chasseurs and three battalions of Siberian grenadiers'; and the body of reserve of the Nепров regiment of musqueteers and the three squadrons of Oleopol hussars.

Lastly, the seventh column consisted of two hundred Tschornomor Cossacs, two battalions of Catherinoslaw chasseurs, and the Koselow regiment of musketeers; and the body of reserve, of the regiment of musketeers from Ugli and three squadrons of Elizabethgrad horse chasseurs.

The cavalry upon the right wing consisted of two squadrons of Kiowie horse chasseurs, four squadrons of carabineers, two from Sever and two from Sophi, and six squadrons of Mariopol light horse. Between the fourth and fifth columns, on account of the greatness of that interval, and to cover the artillery, was placed an intermediate corps of seven squadrons of Pereiaslaw horse chasseurs, and five squadrons of Alexander light horse. On the right wing of the fifth column were ten squadrons of Tschernikow and Glukow carabineers, and three squadrons of Oleopol hussars.

On the left wing between the sixth and seventh columns were four squadrons of Elizabethgrad horse chasseurs, six squadrons of Achtik light horse, and three squadrons of Woroni hussars. The Cossacs occupied the four principal points of the two wings

on the banks of the Vistula, and were to the number of three hundred and fifty, and six hundred and thirty; and between the fourth and fifth columns to the number of four hundred and twenty-five, and seven hundred and fifty.

The Russian troops who were ready to put themselves in motion in the order here described, were waiting for the signal in the profoundest silence. General Suworow gave the word of Belabenka, and the musket, which was the signal of attack, was fired at five in the morning. Immediately they were all in motion, although it was then very dark. Suworow went in person and posted himself on a height, whence he might observe every thing that passed, about a werst from the outermost of the enemy's works.

The two first columns, as well as the bodies of reserve in the interval between them, were exposed during their approach to the cross fire of several batteries, namely, of that which they were attacking, of those of the small islands which were fortified on the Vistula, of those of Marimont and even of Warsaw, and on their flanks to a fire of case shot, and of musketry. But nothing could discourage them, and they rapidly leaped the ditch and the parapet, and fell upon the cavalry and infantry that were behind them. Brigadier Polewanow caused these two first columns to be supported by some squadrons of horse chasseurs, who leaped over the ditch, attacked the remainder of the enemy's cavalry, and defeated them with the bayonet. The infantry drove the enemy to the banks of the Vistula, penetrated into the suburb itself, pursued them from street to street, as far as the bridge, cut off their retreat over it, killed two thousand men upon the spot, and made two thousand

prisoners, among whom were several officers and two Generals. About one thousand men, who attempted to save themselves by swimming, perished in the Vistula.

The third and fourth columns were obliged to ascend a small sandy hill, where they found great obstacles to be surmounted. Impatient to arrive, the greater part threw away their hurdles and fascines, in order to march faster over the sand, and only made use of their ladders, helping each other with their hands to pass the six lines of wells the enemy had dug.

The third column took possession of two strong detached bastions, and penetrated, notwithstanding a vigorous resistance, into the interior of the works. They had particular reason to fear the efforts of the enemy's cavalry, who put themselves in motion to fall upon their flank; but General Istinief immediately ordered some battalions of grenadiers to form a line and attack them with the bayonet. This manœuvre obliged the enemy to take to flight.

The fourth column took a cavalier, and an advanced fort, surrounded with a stone wall, and their batteries, which were palisadoed. These troops then immediately divided, and penetrated on both sides into the park. They leaped over the hedge and the parapet, carried five more batteries, and attacked the enemy in front, and on their flanks. Thus the enemy had two thousand men cut in pieces, and General Hœsler was taken prisoner, with twenty other officers.

There was also towards the park, a regiment of the line, composed entirely of Jews, to the number of five hundred, well armed and equipped, and on the

same footing with the other Polish regiments, from whom they could not be distinguished. They made an obstinate defence, but were at length all destroyed to the very last man, except their Colonel Hirschko, who prudently remained at Warsaw.

While these two columns were approaching the last fort of the interior intrenchment, a magazine of powder and bombs blew up, but the vicinity of this explosion did not, for a moment delay their march.

The fifth column overcame every difficulty with prodigious rapidity, carried the batteries, and after having penetrated into the suburb, went directly by the great street, to the bridge, and assisted the infantry of the first column, to cut off the retreat of the fugitives over the bridge of Warsaw.

The seventh column met with many obstacles. They had been obliged to set forward on the march much sooner than the other columns, to file round a marsh. They passed through two villages, formed themselves into a column, arrived at the intrenchment raised between the pond and the small arm of the Vistula, carried three batteries, and marched on. The enemy's cavalry which had endeavoured to stop their progress, were cut off by a part of this column, and the rest were destroyed by the bayonet or thrown into the Vistula, where nearly a thousand men perished, and five hundred were taken prisoners.

As soon as the columns were in possession of the advanced posts, and had penetrated beyond them, the bodies of reserve advanced towards the points prescribed them, and soon after the artillery performed the same manœuvre, supported by the caval-

ry of reserve, which took a number of prisoners among those who were flying.

Till this period the columns had combated and repulsed the enemy in the great interval which separated the external intrenchments from the fortifications of the suburb, as in the field of battle. They now penetrated into the farthest of the fortifications of Prague itself, and began to make a dreadful carnage in the streets and public squares, which were deluged with blood. The most dreadful of these scenes was the massacre of some thousand men, arrested in their flight on the banks of the Vistula. The Russians took three thousand four hundred prisoners, and the remainder were killed with the sword and bayonet, or drowned in the river before the eyes of the inhabitants of Warsaw, who, from the opposite bank, vainly stretched forth their hands to assist them.

So great a number of prisoners however, taken at a single point during the heat of the action, leaves no doubt of the moderation of the conquerors ; and this fact, which, like all the rest of this action, was fully authenticated, at length destroyed the exaggerated accounts and pamphleteering declamations, which, by doubling the numbers of the killed, endeavoured to tarnish the glory of the Russian General. Besides, were equity at all compatible with party spirit, the writers who have deplored the fate of Poland would have observed, that it is rarely in the power of the leaders to suspend or curb the impetuosity of the soldiers in the heat of the action, still less in the fury of an assault, and, least of all, in such an assault as that of Prague, where the majority of the Russians were

animated with the remembrance of their losses during the insurrection of Warsaw in 1793.

But another equally lamentable spectacle presented itself to the inhabitants of that capital in the burning of several houses of Prague, the destruction of which seemed to menace them with a speedy fate. At once they heard balls hissing on every side, bombs bursting, and the cries of the dying. The mournful sound of the tocsin increased the noise of the artillery, and the consternation was universal amidst all classes of the inhabitants.

A bomb fell into the hall of the revolutionary council while the members were assembled, and in bursting, killed the secretary, who was reading a paper to the members.

About a thousand persons of both sexes took refuge, together with their most valuable property, in and before the house of the English Minister, in hopes of being spared when the Russians entered the city. But those of the suburb had no retreat, because the General, who had caused the approaches to the bridge to be defended from the beginning of the assault, caused it to be burnt on the side towards the Russians, to prevent Warsaw from being exposed either to massacre or pillage. After some time, he caused the cannonade to be slackened. At length, the fire of the artillery wholly ceased, and at nine in the morning, that is, after four hours fighting, the assault was finally terminated.

There are few examples of a military operation so boldly conceived, so skilfully performed, or so important in its consequences ; since, by extinguishing in a single day the fire of the insurrection, it caused the overthrow of a throne, the constitutional

existence of which had given rise to so many storms, and thus finally restored the public tranquillity.

It required undoubtedly, the greatest intrepidity to strike this decisive blow : for the Russians were obliged to penetrate by pure force a triple intrenchment, which was defended by a formidable artillery and a garrison of thirty thousand men, before the eyes of the capital of the kingdom, which founded all its hopes on this bulwark, which was defended by its bravest warriors.

Of the Poles, thirteen thousand men lay upon the field of battle, one third of whom were the flower of the youth of Warsaw ; above two thousand were drowned in the Vistula, and the number of prisoners was little inferior to that of the killed ; for it amounted to fourteen thousand, six hundred, and eighty. Of these, eight thousand were immediately set at liberty, and the others enjoyed the same favour the next day.

Among the prisoners were Generals Mayen, Hesler, and Crupinski, five colonels, twenty-five staff officers, and four hundred and thirteen superior officers. Generals Jascinski, Korseck, Kwaschnefski, and Grabowski were killed. Only eight hundred men saved themselves by flying over the bridge to Warsaw.

Jascinski, one of the best officers of engineers, and of artillery, in the Polish army, and leader of the revolution at Wilna, had come on a visit to his friends at Warsaw, the evening before the assault, and had told them, that if the Russians were not repulsed, they would never see him more, as he

was resolved to perish. He was killed, sword in hand, by the bayonet, in the first intrenchment.

The Russians lost five hundred and eighty men, eight of whom were superior and staff officers ; and they had nine hundred wounded, twenty-three of whom were superior and staff officers. They had under arms, at this assault, twenty-two thousand men, viz. fifteen thousand infantry and artillery, four thousand horse, and about three thousand Cossacs.

The Poles, who had been deceived by the batteries erected by the Russians, were persuaded they would undertake a regular siege. This error consoled and encouraged them the more, as the approach of winter would probably suspend the siege, and leave them in repose till the next year. The night before the assault, they had removed thirty-six pieces of cannon from Warsaw to Prague, and had only kept thirty guns on the other bank of the Vistula. This fire did the Russians more mischief than that of the intrenchments.

The artillery taken from the enemy consisted of one hundred and four pieces of cannon and mortars, chiefly of large calibre.

As soon as all was over, General Suworow gave the command of Prague to General Burhawden, who occupied it with six battalions, ten squadrons, two regiments of Cossacs, and all the field artillery, most part of which were pointed against the bridge, and the rest towards the river. A strong guard was set, and pickets stationed in the suburb and out of it, and the rest of the troops encamped round Prague, and in the intrenchments, forming a semi-

circle, of which each extremity terminated at the river.

Suworow took up his station under the cavalier, without the intrenchment, near the park. Here he assembled several of the Generals and superior officers, and they congratulated each other on the victory. Suworow ordered some refreshment to be served, to which he invited the Polish Generals, his prisoners. The officers were allowed to retain their sabres and were treated amicably.

After this repast, General Suworow took a few hours rest, on some straw, in one of the soldier's tents, and a Kalmuk tent, called Kibika, was prepared for him to pass the night.

He also gave orders relative to the subsistence of the prisoners, and the care of the wounded, most of whom were sent back to Warsaw and set at liberty. In the afternoon, the troops were employed in carrying off the artillery taken from the enemy, and removing the arms, tents and other military implements to the places of their destination.

The night was no less tranquil than the morning had been tumultuous. Only a few guns were fired from Warsaw at day break, but the Russian artillery did not deign to answer their fire.

---

## CHAP. XX.

THE day after the taking of Prague, some members of the Magistracy arrived there at day break with a letter from the King, and a note from the council of Warsaw, to treat relative to a capi-

tulation; they were conducted into the tent of the General, *pro tempore*, Islinief, who had a conference with them, and read the dispatches, which they delivered to him.

Those of the Magistracy were as follows:

"The council of the city of Warsaw, appointed to watch over the happiness and tranquillity of the inhabitants, are taking every measure in their power to prevent any troubles on the approach of the Russian troops, and, as they have succeeded in keeping good order in the city, they have resolved to address his Excellency Count Suworow, General in chief of the Russian troops, to entreat him to save the lives and property of the inhabitants, if the troops in Warsaw lay down their arms. With this view the Magistracy have deputed Messrs. Makarowitsch, Barakowski and Straltowski to confer with his Excellency, and to ask him, both in the name of the Magistracy and of all the inhabitants, a suspension of arms, until the articles of capitulation shall be settled."

At Warsaw, 24th October,  
4th November, 1794.

Islinief immediately informed Suworow of the arrival of these deputies. The General received the news with the greatest satisfaction, and immediately dictated the following articles to his secretary:

I. The troops of Warsaw shall lay down their arms without the city, at the spot to be assigned, but they shall be treated with gentleness.

II. All the artillery and ammunition shall be brought to the same place.

III. The bridge shall be repaired as soon as possible, that the Russian troops may enter the city to take possession of it, and protect the inhabitants.

IV. It is promised in the supreme name of her Imperial Majesty, that the military shall have liberty to return to their homes, or wheresoever they shall please to go, and the safety of the city and of their property is guranteed ; but every thing must be finished before the entry of the Imperial army.

V. His Majesty the king shall retain the same dignity as before.

VI. It is again declared, in the most solemn manner, to all the inhabitants, that they have no cause of alarm for their property or persons, and that they may rely on oblivion for the past.

VII. The troops of her Imperial majesty shall enter the city this afternoon or to-morrow, as soon as the bridge shall be repaired.

*At the camp of Prague, 22d October,  
5th November, 1794.*

(Signed) COUNT SUWOROW RYMNICKI.

Suworow immediately sent back General Ilinief to the plenipotentiaries of the Magistracy, to communicate these articles to them, on hearing which they were transported with joy, and their eyes were full of tears while they read, as they had not flattered themselves with so much indulgence.

After discharging this commission, General Ilinief conducted the deputies to Suworow who was seated before his tent ; but perceiving them much embarrassed on approaching him, he sprang from

his seat, threw his sabre at his feet, and crying out in the Polish language Pakoi (peace,) ran up to them, embraced them, brought them into his tent, and seated them on the ground by his side. They burst into tears, expressing by this mute eloquence, which was far more expressive than words, all the sentiments of joy, gratitude and admiration, with which they were affected. Suworow entertained them with kindness, ordered them some refreshments, and requested them to inform him, within four-and-twenty hours, of the determination of the Magistracy, relative to the articles delivered them.

During the interval of this answer from Warsaw, the day was employed in clearing the streets and squares of Prague, and in interring the dead. In the evening Suworow retired to his quarters at Belalinka, where he passed the night.

The next day at ten in the morning the same deputies returned from Warsaw to the head quarters with the following answer to the propositions.

I. The city of Warsaw will peaceably lay down their arms at such place as shall be judged proper.

II. The city of Warsaw has no artillery or ammunition.

III. The city of Warsaw will order the bridge to be repaired as soon as possible, that her Imperial Majesty's troops may take possession of the city, and take the inhabitants under their protection.

IV. The city of Warsaw have the honour of informing his Excellency the Count de Suworow, that they have no troops under their orders, and therefore cannot fully comply with the fourth

article, but they will make all the efforts in their power to induce the military commanders to conform to it.

V. The city of Warsaw, which has always treated its kings with respect, will with pleasure fulfil the duty of which they are reminded by this article.

VI. The city of Warsaw considers, as the basis of all the other articles, this promise of safety to the inhabitants for their persons and property, and the engagement of the Russians to forget the past.

VI. It is wholly impossible to comply with his Excellency's orders in so short a space of time, that the Russian troops may enter the city to-morrow. The repairs of the bridge require some days, and the troops of the republic are unable to march at present, since it will require about a week to evacuate the place.

*At the Town-house, the 25th October,  
5th November, 1794.*

The deputies had also some verbal commissions relative to the exchange of prisoners, and the currency of the paper in circulation, of which the Magistracy were desirous of keeping up the credit.

These articles of reply appeared somewhat suspicious, and it seemed as if their object was to gain time. Hence Suworow required the deputies to return immediately to Warsaw, to obtain a more precise determination. He also delivered them some additional articles, with a letter to the following effect.

“ I observe with pleasure that both parties are

agreed as to the most essential articles. I demand that order be given to the royal corps in the city, to conduct themselves amicably towards those of my sovereign which are to enter it, and to maintain good order and tranquillity. On these conditions I will be answerable to the inhabitants for the safety of their lives and property, and for oblivion for the past."

*At the Camp of Prague, the 26th October,  
6th November, 1794.*

COUNT SUWOROW RYMNIKSKI.

*Supplement to the Articles of Capitulation.*

I. The Magistracy shall cause the inhabitants to be disarmed, and their arms carried over in boats to Prague; they shall also cause the arms that are found in the shops to be delivered up to them.

II. The city of Warsaw shall deliver up the arsenal, powder and ammunition in the corps of her Imperial Majesty, who shall have orders to receive them.

III. The city of Warsaw, in consequence of the promise that has been given them, shall require the Polish troops to lay down their arms, and if they should not consent they shall order them to evacuate the city.

IV. Time is given till the 28th Oct.-8th Nov. for the repair of the bridge, and for the prolongation of the armistice. As to the repair of the bridge, the troops of her Imperial Majesty shall be ordered to assist, in order to accelerate the work.

V. All the Russian prisoners detained at Warsaw shall be set at liberty to-morrow, 27th Oct.-7th Nov.

VI. The inhabitants shall request his Majesty to order the regular troops to lay down their arms, except four hundred men for his horse-guards, and 600

for his foot-guards, who shall remain around his person, and do duty at the castle.

VII. The council of the city shall be upon the bridge with all its members, and shall present the keys of the city to the commander in chief, at the entry of her Imperial Majesty's troops. All the houses of the city shall be that.

VIII. The Magistracy shall deliver up the archives, and all their correspondence to the Russian minister.

### COUNT SUWOROW RYMNICKI.

General Burhawden, who commanded at Prague, now received orders, immediately to repair the bridge of the castle, which had been burned at the end towards that suburb.

General Fersen was ordered to cause the division of Major-General Denisow to pass the river at the little town of Korezew, four miles from Prague, and to go thither himself with the rest of his corps.

The object of this order was to attack the troops who should fly from Warsaw with their arms, and at the same time, in case of any treachery or insurrection in that capital, to fly thither immediately, and to attack it on the other side towards the country.

Barons d'Asch and de Buhler, who were members of the corps diplomatic, and prisoners at Warsaw, together with many others, were set at liberty on their parole, and came the same day to Suworow's camp, to offer him their warmest acknowledgements, both for themselves, and in the name of the prisoners. They returned after dinner, where their presence had a good effect, and contributed much to inspire the inhabitants with confidence.

In the night between the 26th and 27th of October, there was a great tumult at Warsaw. The troops under the orders of Wavroschewski attempted to carry away the King, and all the Russian prisoners.

The ill-disposed among the inhabitants joined the military, and, spreading through various parts of the city, committed many excesses and robberies. To prevent the execution of this plot, of which they foresaw the consequences, the Magistracy ordered the people to oppose it, and to repel force by force. In consequence of this, several thousand of the inhabitants, who were obedient to the Magistracy, went to the castle and neighbouring streets, to obstruct the passage, and unanimously declared to the insurgents, that they would not suffer the King to be carried off, as his presence was decisive to the fate of the city; and that they would rather sacrifice their lives, than permit an act of violence, so fatal to the public good.

In the afternoon, Lieutenant Colonel Hofman came to the General's quarters with some verbal commissions, and a letter from the King, requesting Suworow to postpone his entry into Warsaw for a week, that delay being absolutely necessary for the evacuation of the place. (This letter is inserted in the Supplement, B.)

Hofman was sent back to the King, accompanied by Major Hoffen, to communicate to His Majesty, the decision of General Suworow, who, in lieu of consenting to the delay demanded, begged the King to consider the tumult that had taken place the preceding night, and of which he was informed, as an additional motive to accelerate his entry into the city as much as possible; and declared that it should take place in two days, as well to guard the personal

safety of the King, as to restore the public tranquillity.

The King of Poland listened with great attention to the report of these two officers, and acknowledged the justice of General Suworow's observations. In the meanwhile, Wavroschewski, being traversed in the execution of his designs by the resistance of the people, in concert with the supreme council, placed the authority into the hands of the King, declaring he no longer saw any means of providing for the safety of the republic. The first use the Monarch made of his power, was to leave to Suworow the choice of the day when he would make his entry into the city, promising to cause the bridge to be re-established as speedily as possible. Hofinan carried this answer to the camp at four o'clock in the afternoon.

In the meanwhile, Ignatius Potocki came to the camp before dinner, to renew the King's request, still to postpone the entry a week. He dismounted at Lieutenant-General Potemkin's, together with whom he was invited to dine with General Suworow.

While they were at table, Mastowski also came from Warsaw. When he was announced, the General arose to go and meet him in the antichamber, taking with him, Potocki, and the General, *pro tempore*, Ilinief, and shewed them into his study. Mastowski delivered to Potocki a letter, under seal, from the King, the contents of which were communicated to Suworow; namely, an unlimited power to treat on the conditions of peace.

The General was much concerned to observe so many delays and contradictions, and answered, in few words, "We are not at war with Poland. Her

“ Imperial Majesty did not send me hither as a minister, but as General in Chief, to annihilate the army of the insurgents. I shall not enter into explanations on any subject foreign to my duty.”

Mastowski immediately returned to Warsaw; but Potocki came back to table, and set off after dinner.

Suworow had been advised to keep Count Potocki, who was one of the principal leaders of the revolution, as an hostage for the Russian prisoners; but he rejected the idea, saying, “ why should we detain an hostage? All the prisoners will be set at liberty without it: besides, it would be a crime to betray the confidence of an enemy, who is come to negotiate on the faith of an armistice.”

When the suburb of Prague was quite cleared, Suworow removed his head-quarters thither from Belalinka, that he might be nearer to the Vistula, and the centre of his operations.

The detachment commanded by Denisow, had already passed the river; the cavalry swimming, and the infantry one half on the horses' croups, and the other in the boats, which also carried over the artillery. The insurgents who were on the opposite banks, endeavoured to oppose this manœuvre, but were repulsed, and nothing stopped the progress of the Russians.

The next morning, at day break (28 October), the same deputies returned from Warsaw with two letters, one from the King, and one from the Magistracy, requesting that the Russians would make their entry as soon as possible. They declared that their presence was indispensably necessary, on account of the intestine troubles, and the danger that

threatened the person of the King; that the insurgents had gone out of the city, under arms, and had stopped in the neighbourhood, where they excited great uneasiness.

The letter from the King is inserted in the Supplement, letter C. That of the Magistracy was in the following terms:

“ The Magistracy of the city of Warsaw, after having fully executed the articles of capitulation, sent to the inhabitants of Warsaw by his Excellency Count de Suworow, General in chief of the Russian troops, have the honour of representing to him :

I. That the inhabitants of this city have already deposited, in their respective districts, muskets, pistols, sabres, scythes, pikes, and generally all their arms. The Magistracy will speedily cause the said arms to be put on board of boats to be carried over to the Prague side. They request his Excellency to order them to be landed on their arrival. As to the arms of great value, and those found in the shops, they have been deposited at the town-house to be preserved for their proprietors.

II. They have with the same care withdrawn the gunpowder, and all the ammunition found in possession of the inhabitants, and they shall equally be delivered up to his Excellency the Count whenever he shall please to order. The same shall be done, as soon as possible, with regard to the ammunition of the troops of the republic, that have quitted the city.

III. His Majesty the King has condescended to facilitate the execution of this article as far as regards the troops within the city.

IV. The Magistracy assure his Excellency the Count de Suworow, that the bridge shall most certainly be repaired on the side towards the city, within the time prescribed.

V. His Majesty the King will voluntarily consent to the liberation of the prisoners, as also to the execution of article three above cited.

VI. The Magistracy will immediately request the King to give orders for the delivery of arms, and for the evacuation of the city by the troops, except the three thousand soldiers of the police, and the one thousand men of foot and horse-guards, whom the King has a right to retain around his person, to keep good order in the city, and to do duty at the castle.

\* VII. When the troops of her Imperial Majesty shall make their entry into the city, the Magistracy will perform their duty in a proper manner.

*Warsaw, the 27th October,  
7th November, 1794.*

*Answer of the Commander in Chief.*

The capitulation accepted and signed.

COUNT ALEXANDER SUWOROW RYMNICKI.

*The camp at Prague, 28th October,  
8th November, 1794.*

Suworow demanded of the deputies if the Russian prisoners were restored to liberty, conformably to the last articles. They answered, that every disposition for that purpose was taken; and requested the General to appoint a person to receive them.

Prince Labanow Rastowski was sent to Warsaw with that commission, and the prisoners were restor-

ed to him on his arrival. He at the same time, informed the King that the Russians would enter on the following morning.

---

## C H A P. XXI.

THE conferences being terminated, in conformity to the capitulation, Count Suworow made his entry into the capital, attended by his generals and the brave troops whom he had so often led to glory. It bore the appearance of a triumph.

At seven in the morning, the troops defiled by the bridge in the city, drums beating and colours flying. The corps of Lieutenant General Potemkin led the march, and that of General Derfelden immediately followed him.

At nine, Suworow passed the bridge on horseback, surrounded by his adjutants and officers. He wore the uniform of an officer of cavalry, without the least decoration, and was followed by the regiment of Cherson, with a numerous band of military music.

He was received on the other side of the bridge, by the magistrates of the city, in a body, and in their ceremonial habits (which are black). The President presented to him, on a velvet cushion, the keys of the city (which are red), with the usual accompaniments of salt and bread; and delivered a brief harangue.

The General took the keys, pressed them to his lips, and then, holding them up towards Heaven, he said: " Almighty God, I render thee thanks, that I have not been compelled to purchase the keys of

“ this place as dear as . . . .” turning his face towards Prague, his voice failed him, and his cheeks were instantly bathed with tears.—He then cordially embraced the magistrates, and was immediately surrounded by a crowd of people. Some threw themselves at his feet; others extended their arms towards him, and he gave his hands to his humble admirers. He embraced such as were nearest to him, and answered with a silent sensibility to these ardent displays of esteem and respect, which are more affecting than the loudest eulogiums; and which, in one moment, afford a recompence for years of fatigue and danger. He gave the cushion and the keys to General Illinief, who preceded him on horseback, and the procession continued.

Although the magistrates had given special orders that the houses should be shut, and that no one should be seen in the streets, they were, nevertheless, filled with people. But, as those who might possess the wish to excite disturbance, perceived the impossibility of success, the whole passed on with the greatest order and tranquillity. All the windows were filled with spectators, who were delighted at the return of order and of the assurance of peace; and the air resounded with the exulting exclamations of, “ Long live Catherine! “ Long live Suworow!”

When the General came to the cathedral, he ordered all his suite to halt, and repeated a prayer. At the extremity of the city he alighted at a public hotel, where he dined. He afterwards took a house in that part of the town which was nearest the camp, where he fixed his head-quarters.

He had also ordered Lieutenant-General Potem-

kin, on his entrance into the city, to go and pay his respects to the King, at the castle, and to attend to the safety of his person.

Major-General Burhawden was appointed Governor of Warsaw.

A new and very effecting trial was now made of Suworow's sensibility, when the magistrates presented to him the Russian prisoners, to the number of thirteen hundred and seventy-six, whom he had restored to liberty, and whose lives he had preserved: for it had actually been proposed in the revolutionary committee, prior to the taking of Prague, by a wretch named Kolontay, the Robespierre of Poland, to massacre all the prisoners, and even the Poles who were suspected of being attached to the court of Russia. The arrival of the Russians, however, prevented the execution of this horrible design; though the infernal projector contrived to escape, with an hundred and fifty thousand ducats which he stole from the mint and public treasury.

When Lieutenant-General Potemkin paid his visit to the King, he was commissioned to demand an audience for Count Suworow, which was appointed on the following day.

Accordingly, at ten o'clock in the morning, he set out with great ceremony, and accompanied by his guard, to go to the castle. Contrary to his usual custom, he wore his grand uniform, and was decorated with all his Orders. Two squadrons of hussars preceded him, and his carriage was surrounded by officers of all ranks. Lieutenant-General Potemkin, with the Barons Asch and Ruhler, of diplomatic character, accompanied him. A squadron of horse chasseurs closed the procession.

On his arrival in the court of the castle, he was received with great ceremony; the King embraced him and conducted him to his cabinet, where they remained together upwards of an hour.

This conference, however, produced an arrangement that the written negotiations had not settled. It was agreed, on the representations of General Suworow, that the Polish troops, whom he always mentioned under the denomination of revolters, should lay down their arms without exception, and deliver up their artillery to the Russians.

In the course of this visit, the King requested Suworow to restore an officer to liberty, who had been his page, when the General replied, that he might command the liberty of five hundred, if it was his Majesty's pleasure.

The King, accordingly, dispatched his Adjutant-General Gordon, with Suworow's order for the restitution of the prisoners; and as they were not particularly named, he took all the superior officers, to the number of three hundred and seventeen; and among them General Mayen, who has been mentioned in a former page. Gordon, however, to complete his number, brought along with him several inferior officers and soldiers. The General returned in the same form to his hotel.

Lieutenant-General Potemkin was charged with the commission of bearing to the Empress, at Petersburg, the official relation of all these important transactions.

## C H A P. XXII.

WARSAW was at length in a state of submission and tranquillity, and entirely in the power of the conqueror.

Besides the troops which had been left at Prague; the corps of Lieutenant-General Potemkin occupied the interior of Warsaw, and extended as far as Willanow: that of General Dersfelden repaired to Marimont. That of General Fersen was proceeding to complete the operations, and had set out to overtake the Polish troops which had retired from Warsaw, to compel them to surrender their arms.

They were supposed to amount to thirty thousand men, with a very formidable artillery, and were commanded by General Wavrochewski, the intimate friend of Kosciuzko. His intention was to penetrate with this corps into Galicia.

The first division commanded by Hedroitsch, which quitted Warsaw prior to the arrival of the Russians before Prague, consisted of two thousand infantry, four thousand men armed with pikes, and fifteen hundred horse. They had with them twenty-five pieces of cannon.

The corps of Dombrowski and of Madalinski, the same which had excited the troubles in Southern Prussia, amounted to eighteen thousand men, with twenty pieces of artillery.

A party commanded by Prince Joseph Poniatowski, was posted at Sachorzyn, to the number of two thousand five hundred, with seventeen cannon; and a detachment commanded by Oscharowski

was composed of fifteen hundred men, with ten cannon.

On the 30th of October, Prince Joseph Poniatowski sent an officer to the King, to inform him that the troops were desirous of surrendering their arms to General Suworow, and that they implored his clemency. The General accordingly ordered his former declaration to be repeated, that he should grant protection and security to all who should submit. He also promised that the commander, officers, and nobles, should have permission to retain their arms.

The king returned this answer to his nephew; but before he could receive it, he had been attacked by the Prussian forces, which were encamped near him, who had dispersed his troops, and taken some hundred prisoners, with all his artillery.

The detachment of Oschorowski, without waiting for any answer, or promise of pardon, laid down their arms and dispersed. The Cossacs brought their artillery to Warsaw.

On the following day, Major-General Horschowski was dispatched to Warsaw, by General Hedroitsch, with a dispatch addressed to the King, containing propositions similar to those of Prince Joseph; this officer returned immediately with the same answer, but before his arrival, Hedroitsch had formed a junction with the corps of Madalinski at Dombrowski, which had been already joined by the Commander in Chief Wavrochewski. But as the Russian troops had effectually prevented them from fulfilling their first project of retreating into Gallicia, they suddenly changed their plan, and turned towards Novemjasto, on the road to Crakow,

with the design of invading the district lately conquered by the King of Prussia. But the Russian troops pursued them with that vigour and rapidity, that at length, after various attempts and exertions, to escape the enemy, a considerable part of the Polish army surrendered, and the rest, with all their arms, horses and artillery, followed their example.

Thus the Polish army, being dispersed, disarmed, or reduced to submission, there only remained the royal guard, and three hundred soldiers for the service of the police. The artillery and stores were sent to Kiowie, and the Russian troops entered into winter quarters.

---

### C H A P. XXIII.

**S**UCH was the close of this glorious campaign, which is far superior to any thing that is to be found in the military annals of modern times: as well for the unexampled rapidity of its operations, as the important consequences that resulted from it.

The career of General Suworow, the wisdom of his measures, the distributions of his forces, the undaunted character of his operations, and the progressive continuance of his successes, are dazzling proofs of the superiority of his talents. But though it may be said, with truth, that these great qualities were manifested in all his enterprises, in this last campaign he seems to have surpassed himself. We have only to collect the events of it to prove that a

small army may work wonders, when a General, by the vigour of his resolution and the skill of applying the means he possesses, can give stability to fortune.

We have seen Suworow disarm without effusion of blood, thirty thousand rebels, scattered over an extensive country ; accompany his soldiers in long and difficult marches, which would have disheartened the troops of Hannibal, and gain three battles against enemies, of martial intrepidity and superior numbers.—We have seen him temporise during four weeks, at Brzescia, till his detachment had formed a junction with him ; and, after the decisive victory of Matscheviz, to fly, as it were, to that of Kobylka.—We have seen him reposing there only for the three days which were necessary to make preparations for an assault without example ; he then carried by escalade in one morning, the intrenchments of Prague, defended by thirty thousand men ; and entered into Warsaw with the olive branch of peace.

Nor is this all.—These wonderful achievements were effected in the short space of two months, between the sixth of September and the seventh of November, 1794 ; the day when Wavroschewski laid down his arms.

But this brilliant expedition is not more remarkable for its astonishing rapidity, than it is memorable for the extraordinary events which succeeded.

In a short time after, the fate of Poland was irrevocably decided by the late partition of a kingdom, whose name is no longer to be found among the nations of Europe ; and which, in a former age, dictated laws to Russia.

If the operations of this campaign had been urged with less activity, it is probable that the insurgents would have reassembled with added strength. The Poles might also have received foreign aid in the Spring of 1795, and prolonged a war, whose events might have had an incalculable influence on the general affairs of Europe.

The unexampled promptitude of this expedition was appreciated, as it deserved, at Petersburg. The Empress wrote herself to Suworow, to announce to him his well earned advancement to the rank of Field-Marshal. But he, ever faithful to his religious principles, did not receive his new dignity, till he had demanded the benediction of the church.

On the eve of this ceremony, an extraordinary messenger arrived from Berlin, who brought him, as a testimony of the particular esteem of his Prussian Majesty, the Order of the Red and Black Eagle.

In a short time after, the Emperor sent him his portrait enriched with diamonds, which were estimated at fifty thousand crowns ; and the jewels that adorned his Batoon of Field-Marshal, were considered as of equal value.

The Empress also presented him with an estate of seven thousand peasants of both sexes, in the district of Kolin, the scene of the first battle he gained in the course of this campaign.

The Field-Marshal Suworow passed a year at Warsaw. The King had left it in the beginning of the year to reside at Grodno. But the departure of the court was succeeded by a great concourse of officers of rank and foreigners of distinction, who came to visit the illustrious warrior.

The situation of public affairs of the common

interests of the Emperor and the King of Prussia, made it necessary for the Field-Marshal to send frequent dispatches to Vienna and Berlin; and the persons employed on these occasions, were received at the respective courts with peculiar marks of regard and favour. His Prussian Majesty conferred the Orders of the Black Eagle and of Merit, on several Generals and officers of the Russian army.

In the beginning of the Autumn, the Field-Marshal reviewed the whole army under his command, which consisted of forty-eight battalions, an hundred and twelve squadrons, and fourteen regiments of Cossacs.

These different troops occupied an extent of country of one hundred and fifty German miles; and the Field-Marshal visited all the separate camps with his usual activity, examined their respective situations, and saw them perform their military manœuvres. This operation was completed in fifteen days.

Towards the end of the year, he returned to Petersburg, in consequence of orders he had received from thence. He arrived there in the beginning of December, in a carriage which the Empress had sent to meet him. He entered the city at night, alighted at the winter palace, and threw himself at the feet of Her Imperial Majesty, who received him with the most distinguishing marks of regard. She ordered him to take up his residence in the palace of Taurida, where he was served by the officers of the Court.

In a short time after his arrival, he went to Finland to visit the fortifications, on the side of Sweden. On his return, he was present at the marriage of the

Grand Duke ; and, during the three months of his residence at Petersburg, the Empress appeared to have no greater pleasure than in manifesting her high esteem for him, and the whole Court followed the example of their Imperial Mistrs.

He was now appointed to the command of the army, which consisted of eighty thousand men, in the governments of Brazlow, Wosnenski, Charkow and Catharinaflaw, and he accordingly repaired to fulfil the important duties of it. He fixed his headquarters at Tulezin, in the castle of Potoka, on the banks of the Niester.

According to his constant practice he attended to the discipline of the troops which were encamped near him. In the Autumn he made a tour of general inspection of the whole army ; and, on his return, gave orders for its entering into winter quarters.

After having run with a gigantic stride this vast career of glory, thick sown indeed with obstructions, but producing a continual harvest of laurels, from the frozen banks of the Vistula, to the burning sands of the Black Sea, this illustrious warrior is called to the command of the Austro-Russian armies in Italy.

He came into that country to save it, and he has been its saviour. His first entrance into it was attended by victory ; and victory has accompanied his march through it. He brought his brave and hardy bands from the North, to drive back the profligate, pillaging and blood-thirsty armies of France, to their own country ; and they are driven back with disgrace and slaughter.—They already

approach its confines:—and, with the same rapid step, he will follow them; and, with the same avenging sword, we trust, will punish them there.

His Campaigns of the present year will, we doubt not, add to the glory of those that are past, and with them we shall hereafter extend the History of Suworow.

BRITISH LIBRARY

MS. ADD. 22. 1. 12.

vol. 1. p. 12.

MS. ADD. 22. 1. 12.

vol. 1. p. 12.

MS. ADD. 22. 1. 12.

vol. 1. p. 12.

MS. ADD. 22. 1. 12.

vol. 1. p. 12.

MS. ADD. 22. 1. 12.

vol. 1. p. 12.

MS. ADD. 22. 1. 12.

vol. 1. p. 12.



## SUPPLEMENT.

Containing various Letters from Her Imperial Majesty the Empress of Russia; the Emperor of Germany; the King of Prussia, and the King of Poland, to General Suworow, during and after the Campaign in Poland.

---

Letter from Her Imperial Majesty, the Empress of all the Russias, to Count Suworow Rymnikski.

Petersburg, October 26,  
November 6, 1794.

Count Alexander Basilovitsch!

Your rapid marches against the enemy, your victories, and particularly those which you gained on the 6th of September at Krupezz, and on the 8th of the same month at Brzescia, are distinguished proof of your constant zeal for our service, and of your activity, bravery and talents. In this point of view we are pleased to consider your successes, and we therefore hasten to express our most grateful sense of them.

We send you, as a pledge of our satisfaction, a diamond hat-loop, and at the same time make you a present of three pieces of cannon, to be

chosen by yourself from the artillery which you have taken.

We pray God to assist you in all that you may hereafter undertake for the service of your country.

I am your affectionate  
CATHERINE.

*Note from the Empress when she presented General Suworow with the Staff of Field-Marshal.*

November 1794.

Field-Marshal General, Count Alexander  
Basilovitsch !

I make you my compliments on all your victories, as well as on your carrying the intrenchments of Prague and Warsaw.

I am with great regard your affectionate  
CATHERINE.

*Ukase (or edict) of Her Imperial Majesty the Empress and Autocratrix of all the Russias, to the Senate, relative to Field-Marshal General Count Suworow Rymnikski.*

The commander in chief, Count Suworow Rymnikski, already recommended by the numerous services he has rendered us, having been appointed by Field-Marshal Count Romanow Zaduneiski, to the command of the troops against the insurgents of Poland, has acquitted himself of the commission with which he was charged to our great satisfaction, by defeating the enemy in several engagements, and particularly in that of Brzescia on the third of September.

As soon as he was informed of the total overthrow of Kosciuzko, the leader of the insurgents, he instantly marched to Warsaw, defeated the enemy's troops on his route, and took Prague, a suburb of Warsaw, defended by strong intrenchments and a numerous garrison, by assault. He carried the works by storm, at the head of our victorious troops, engaged the insurgents, and after a most severe conflict, obliged Warsaw, the capital of the kingdom, to submit her destiny to the hands of the conqueror.

After taking possession of Warsaw, the arms and the prudent measures of the above named General, speedily obliged the numerous bodies of Poles who had retreated, and were vigorously pursued, to surrender with all their artillery and ammunition. The success of this expedition has entirely extinguished the flames of the insurrection in Poland.

In consideration of these services which General Count Suworow Rymnikski has so recently rendered us, and which are no less advantageous than acceptable to Russia, we have appointed him, this 19th of November, 1794, our General Field-Marshal, and at the same time presented him with the staff of Field-Marshal. We order the Senate to expedite a diploma which shall be signed by our own hand, and in which all his military exploits shall be particularized.

CATHERINE.

---

The Senate resolved that the supreme will of her Imperial Majesty should be promulgated, by means

of ukases addressed to all the governments, and all the courts of justice; that the Field Marshal-General should be made acquainted with it, and that the heraldic department should be ordered to draw up a diploma, which should be afterwards submitted to the approbation of the Senate.

*Ukase to the Senate.*

As a recompence for the singular services which General Field-Marshal Count Alexander Suworow has rendered us, by the different victories he has gained over the insurgents of Poland, and especially by the complete defeat of their united forces at Prague, which immediately occasioned the submission of Warsaw, the capital of Poland, and the general termination of the insurrection; we have given, by virtue of our plenary authority, to him, his successors, heirs, &c. full power to take, from the date of the present instrument, and to enjoy in perpetuity, from our Imperial possessions in Lithuania, constituting a part of the ci-devant royal district of Brzescia, the district of Robrin, with all the burghs, manor-houses and villages dependent thereon; which district, according to the registers laid before us, contains a population of 6922 souls; together with all the farms, all the fruits, rents, &c. all the cattle, and, summarily, all the objects of rural economy attached to them.

We enjoin our Senate, by these presents, to expedite the necessary orders for placing this property, with all its appurtenances and dependencies, in the hands of Count Suworow Rymnikski, and for pres-

paring the diploma of this donation, which we purpose to subscribe with our name.

CATHERINE.

*St. Petersburg,  
August 19, 1795.*

*Letters from the Emperor of Germany.*

My dear General Count Suworow,

I learnt with great pleasure, the intelligence you sent me of your fortunate and splendid entry into Warsaw. In proportion as I have constantly valued your extraordinary abilities, I now feel grateful for the zeal you have employed in re-establishing the tranquillity of Poland.

This important event is the incontestable consequence of your military talents, and a fresh proof of your zealous attachment to the good cause. Exploits so brilliant as those, by which you have so repeatedly signalized yourself, will for ever secure you the esteem of the whole world. For the rest, I assure you, with the utmost sincerity, that I shall always entertain for you the same affection that has been constantly felt and expressed by my late uncle, and my ancestors of glorious memory.

FRANCIS.

*Vienna, 23 November, 1794.*

My dear General Count Suworow,

The letter you had the goodness to write me, the 10-21 November last, in which you announce the happy results of your expedition against the insurgents of Poland, has given me the greatest satisfac-

tion. I was pleased at the same time to receive the agreeable assurance that the revolution in that country was at length terminated.

I thank you for this satisfactory intelligence, and heartily felicitate you on the additional glory which you have acquired by this striking proof of your zeal. I now wish you perfect tranquillity in your winter quarters, and every happiness this world can bestow. I conclude with renewing the assurances of my friendship.

FRANCIS.

*Vienna, 23 November, 1794.*

My dear Field-Marshal Count Suworow,

Your letter of the 6-17 of this month, acquainting me with your promotion to the rank of Field-Marshal, afforded me much satisfaction. This reward was undoubtedly due to your brilliant and important services.

As I take a lively interest in your happiness, I shall always be very glad to hear of any thing that is calculated to promote it.

I wish you my dear Field-Marshal, a long and constant series of prosperity, and assure you of my invariable friendship.

FRANCIS.

*Vienna, 23d Dec. 1794.*

My dear Field-Marshal Count Suworow !

As Captain Langfrey returns this day to the place of his destination, I have entrusted him with my portrait for you. I wish the pleasure you may receive from it may equal the desire I feel of

giving you in it a token of my particular esteem for your personal merit.

I trust you enjoy a good state of health, and hope that you will henceforth taste the sweets of repose, to enable you to recover from the incessant fatigues you have hitherto endured. Rest assured of my good wishes.

FRANCIS.

Vienna, Jan. 25, 1795.

My dear Marshal Count Suworow !

I have dispatched my Colonel, the Marquis de Chatelet,\* in quality of Commissioner, for the demarkation of the boundary line between me and Prussia. I have ordered him at the same time to call on you, for the sake of enquiring into your health, and of assuring you that I shall never cease to think of you with gratitude and pleasure. I flatter myself that you will not be sorry to hear from this officer the particulars of several actions in which my troops have recently distinguished themselves, and amongst whom, you, my dear Field-Marshal, will recognize several of your élèves, as well as of your old companions in arms.

Continue to preserve for the sincere friend and admirer of your Royal Mistress the esteem, of which

---

\* This is the excellent officer, to whose uncommon skill and activity we owe much of the success of the glorious battle of the Adda. T.

you have already given so many proofs to me and my house. The grateful remembrance of those proofs is as indelibly engraven on my heart as the profound esteem which your noble character and very distinguished merits, have given me of your person.

FRANCIS.

*Vienna, Nov. 22, 1795.*

---

*Letters from the King of Prussia.*

My very dear General!

By the letter which you had the goodness to write me on the 5th of this month, I learnt with extreme pleasure the agreeable intelligence of the brilliant victory you had obtained by taking possession of Prague. I take the most lively interest in the additional glory which the Russian arms have acquired by this triumph, so honourable to the troops who have combated, under your orders, with such courage and good fortune; and am happy to see the occasions of renewing my felicitations succeed each other with such rapidity. I shall not be less pleased at learning that her Imperial Majesty, my noble ally, accords with me in acknowledging the importance of the services which you have rendered us, with the greatest activity, during this campaign, and that she rewards you accordingly.

For myself, as a mark of the great satisfaction which this victory has given me, I have conferred on Captain Bridel, the officer who brought me

the intelligence, my Order of Merit. I renew the assurance of particular esteem with which I am

Your affectionate

FREDERICK WILLIAM.

*Potsdam, Nov. 1, 1794.*

---

My very dear General !

Your letter, containg the intelligence of your having crowned your former victories by your entry into Warsaw, has afforded me inexpressible satisfaction. You have thus completely attained the end of all your laborious efforts ; for the wreck of the Polish army cannot certainly oppose much resistance, and it will be easy to reduce them by the combined operations of the Russian troops, and of my own under the orders of Lieutenant-General Favrat. I send you my most sincere compliments on the immortal glory you have thus acquired by the re-establishment of tranquillity, and I assure you of my lasting esteem. I have conferred my Order of Merit on Major Hessen, the bearer of this agreeable intelligence.

Your affectionate

FREDERICK WILLIAM.

*Potsdam, Nov. 17, 1794.*

---

My very dear General !

I am sensibly obliged to you for the circumstantial details, which you had the goodness to send me

on the 10-21 of last month, relative to the manner in which you put an end to the insurrection in Poland. Neither your glory nor that of the Imperial Russian troops and their leaders, stood in need of additional lustre: but the success of this expedition raises it to the highest pitch, and insures its eternal duration. I felicitate you upon it with the same sincerity that I renew the assurance of that distinguished esteem, with which I am ever

Your affectionate

FREDERICK WILLIAM.

*Potsdam, Dec. 3, 1794.*

---

My very dear General !

I am fully convinced that you are perfectly satisfied with the rewards of your Sovereign, who duly appreciates your great talents and long experienced bravery. I know also that you are not ambitious of new distinctions, which can certainly add nothing to the lustre of your renown: I nevertheless hope that you will accept with pleasure my Order of the Red and Black Eagle, which I send you as a mark of my distinguished esteem and particular good wishes.

I am your affectionate

FREDERICK WILLIAM.

*Potsdam, Dec. 7, 1794.*

---

My very dear Field-Marshal !

I learnt with the greatest satisfaction, from your letter of the 11-22 December, the value you set

upon the tokens which I presented you of my distinguished esteem and regard. I was equally well pleased at the lucky accident that permitted you, on the same day, to celebrate the inauguration of the staff of Field-Marshal, conferred on you by your gracious Sovereign, and to invest yourself with the Order of the Red and Black Eagle. As you particularly recommended Major Tilley to me on this occasion, I feel a pleasure in giving you a fresh proof of my distinguished esteem, by presenting him with my Order of Merit, in consequence of the lively interest you take in the welfare of this officer. I renew the assurance of the sincere sentiments with which I am

Your affectionate  
FREDERICK WILLIAM.

Berlin, Dec. 28, 1794.

---

*Letter from the King of Poland.*

(A)

Warsaw, October 27,  
November 7, 1794.

To the General, Commander in Chief, of the Troops of her Majesty, the Empress of all the Russias.

The Magistracy of the town of Warsaw, has demanded my mediation with you, in order to know your ulterior intentions relative to this capital.

I must declare to you, that all the inhabitants are resolved to defend themselves to the last extremity,

if you do not guarantee them the safety of their lives and fortunes. I wait your reply, and I pray God to keep you in his holy protection.

STANISLAUS AUGUSTUS, KING.

---

(B) *To the Commander in Chief of the Troops of Her Majesty the Empress of all the Russias!*

As I am convinced you are sincerely desirous of concluding an effectual capitulation with the town of Warsaw, I must acquaint you beforehand that the eight days demanded for the evacuation of the town by the troops of the Republic, are absolutely necessary ; and for this purpose I propose to you a suspension of arms during the eight days, between the Polish army, and the Russian troops : a condition without which the town of Warsaw cannot accede to a capitulation.

I trust you will consent to avoid an effusion of blood, which perhaps is no longer necessary, and consider in this view, the proposition I make you ; and also that you will forbid your troops to restore the bridge on the other bank of the Vistula, till the capitulation be entirely acceded to and signed.

I pray God to keep you in his holy protection.

STANISLAUS AUGUSTUS, KING.

(C) *Warsaw, the* { 28 October  
8 November } 1794.

Sir,

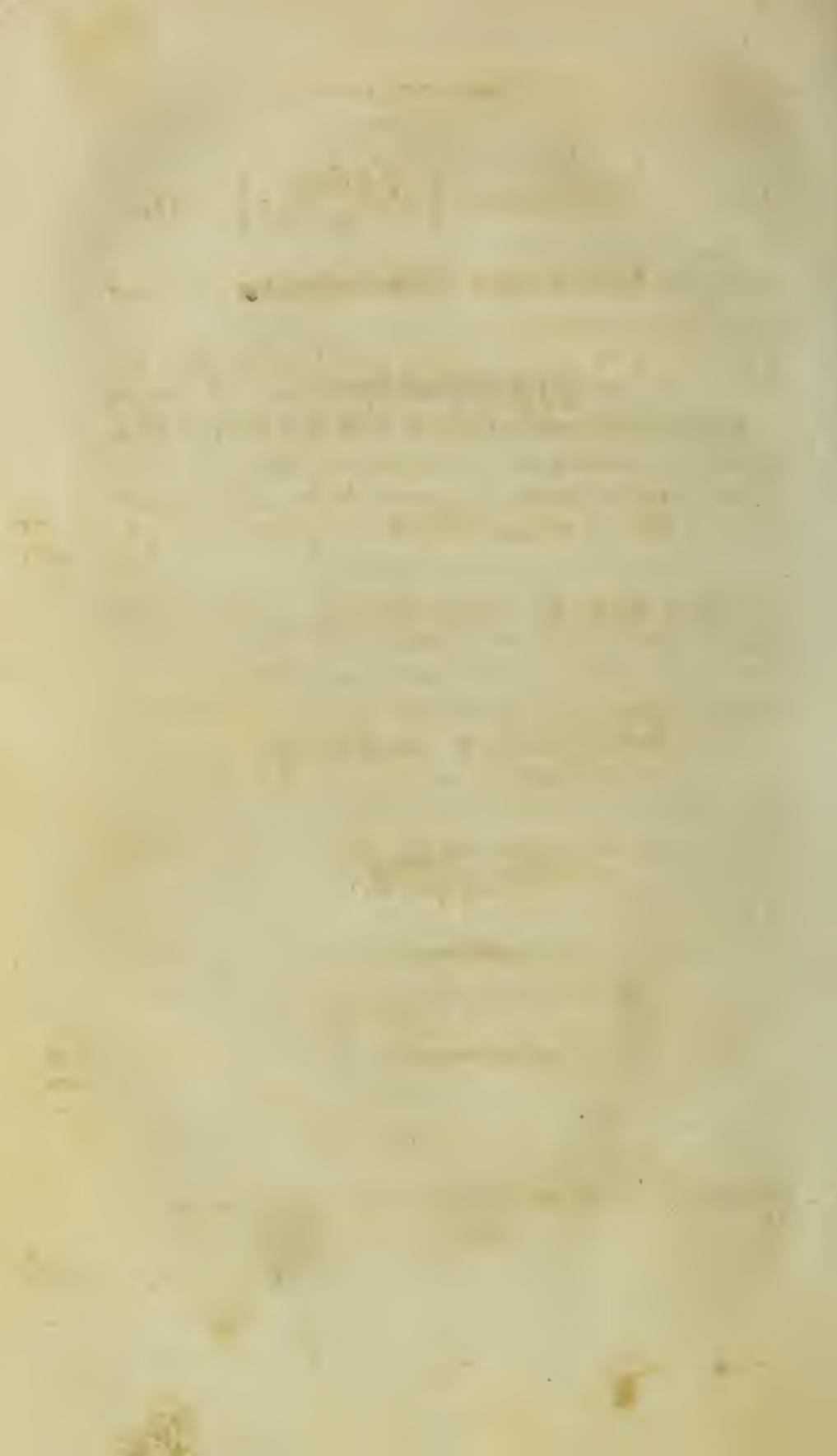
I am perfectly sensible of the candour of your proceedings towards us.

I cannot give you a better proof of it, than by restoring to liberty the Russian prisoners of war in this place, and putting them into the hands of a General so worthy of commanding them.

I pray God to keep you in his holy protection.

STANISLAUS AUGUSTUS, KING.





A

Concise and Comprehensive

*HISTORY*

OF

PRINCE SUWOROW'S

*Campaign in Italy.*

IN THE YEAR 1799.

---

By WILLIAM COBBETT.

---

NEW-YORK:

PRINTED FOR THE AUTHOR, BY G. AND R. WAITE.

1800.



---

---

A CONCISE AND COMPREHENSIVE

*HISTORY*

OF

SUWOROW'S ITALIAN CAMPAIGN.

---

IT was in the month of April, 1799, that the renowned Suworow opened the campaign which threw such brilliancy over the close of the eighteenth Century, and which delivered Italy from the galling and disgraceful yoke, from the pilagings, the murders, and the sacrilege of the rapacious, bloody and impious Republicans of France. This charming country had fallen, state after state, before the arms of the enemies of God and man. The Emperor's Italian possessions, those of the Dukes of Tuscany and Modena, had been over-run and revolutionized; Rome followed next, the aged Pope had been robbed, insulted, and led captive by a French Calvinist, acting under the orders of the infidels of Paris; lastly, the Kings of Naples and Sardinia had been driven from their dominions: so that, at the time Suworow entered Italy, the French were in possession of the whole country from Dauphiné to

the gulph of Venice, and from Switzerland to the Bay of Taranto.

To defend this territory, to keep the Italians chained at their feet, and to sally out on their enemies, their force was evidently inadequate. *Moreau* with about forty thousand men, was stationed in the Milanese; *Championet*, with eighteen thousand, in the states of the Church; *Macdonald*, with twenty thousand, in the Kingdom of Naples, and *Scherer* with forty-seven thousand on the banks of the Adige.

The insolent usurpers of France, still sacrificing safety to pride, and reason to presumption, instead of collecting their forces, which were scattered over the whole face of Italy, and opposing the entire body to the Austrians, who were preparing to attack *Scherer* on the Adige, were obstinately determined to keep possession of all their conquests.

On the 26th of March, *Scherer*, though inferior in force, attacked the Austrians, under General *Kray*, who were posted on the opposite side of the Adige. This was little more than a drawn battle. *Scherer* did, indeed, inform his masters, that he had gained a *victory* and had taken four thousand Austrians and twelve pieces of cannon; but, it nevertheless appeared, that, even from his own account, this victory was confined to the carrying of *two bridges*. The two hostile armies renewed the combat on the 31st of March, and again on the 5th of April, on which last day the French were driven from the banks of the Adige to Mantua with very great loss. According to General *Kray*'s official accounts, the enemy, during the twelve days they were engaged, from the 26th of March to the

fifth of April at night, lost twenty thousand men killed and wounded, and seven thousand prisoners.

Scherer did not attempt to make a stand at Mantua ; he continued his flight till he got behind the Oglio and the Adda ; and, by the 18th of April, the countries of Ferrara, Brescia and Mantua were in the hands of the Imperialists. The accounts of General Kray were probably exaggerated, but certainly the army of “ *invincible conquerors*” were greatly reduced in number. Scherer was recalled by the mortified tyrants of France, and the remnant of his army, after leaving ten thousand men in the city of Mantua and five thousand in Peschiera, was put under the command of Moreau.

On the 14th of April twenty-three thousand Russians, led by *Field-Marshal Suworow*, reached Verona, and the next day proceeded on their way to join Field-Marshal Kray. The command of the combined Imperial armies now devolved on Suworow ; nor was it long before the audacious and impious enemy began to feel the effects of his valour. Moreau, who had received great reinforcements, had posted his army on the banks of the Adda. The position was very strong, and reached from Lecco to Pizzighitone. It was absolutely necessary for the French to keep this station, or yield a very extensive tract of country. On the 23d of April the right wing and centre of the allies entered Bergamo and Bergamasco, while General Klenau passed the Po, and led a division of Austrians into the Modenese. The fate of Milan, therefore, and of the Cisalpine Republic, depended on the preservation of the post of the Adda. This river was very difficult to pass, having in its course from

the Lake of Como to Lodi, very steep banks, and having all its passes well guarded by intrenchments. The French had very faintly defended the space between the Mincio and the Adda, but on the banks of the latter they had taken every measure to make up for their inferiority of numbers and the decreasing courage of the troops. They had strongly fortified Caffano,\* which place and the right bank of the Adda were defended by formidable batteries and a well-constructed *tête-de-pont*. The headquarters of Moreau were at the village of Inzago, and two divisions of his army were posted there, in order to prevent the passage of the Adda at that place. Near Lecco the French were also strongly fortified, and had a *tête-de-pont* on the left bank. A division under General Serrurier defended the upper Adda, one half of which was posted behind Lecco, a part near Porto Imberzago, and another near Tezzo. On the Lower Adda, towards Lodi, the enemy had a detachment under General Delinas, and a strong garrison in Pizzighitone.

Thus posted, and thus fortified both by art and nature, it is not surprising that the French should look upon themselves as secure and unassailable; but they forgot, that Suworow was the assailant.

On the 26th of April the Field Marshal resolved to force the passage of the river, and on the 27th he put his resolution in practice.

Gen. Vukassowich crossed the river in the night near Brivio, by the means of a flying bridge, which had been nearly destroyed by the enemy, but was

---

\* A fortress in the Milanese, fifteen miles N. E. of Milan.

afterwards quickly repaired; and took a good position on the right bank.

An Austrian column arrived at nine o'clock in the evening behind the village of Gervasto, opposite to Trezzo, consisting of the division of Field Marshal Lieut. Ott, as advanced guard; and that of Field Marshal Lieut. Zoph to support it. The Captain of the pontoniers, who had been previously sent forward, reported that it was impossible to throw a bridge, owing to the declivity of the banks, and the sharp turnings of the river.

On receiving this report, the Quarter Master General Marquis Chasteller went to the place himself, and finding the execution of this design difficult, though not quite impossible, resolved with the assistance of the fourth Bannat battalion, and that of the Chasseurs (whose Colonel volunteered the service), to have the pontoons carried down by men, and to attempt to re-establish the bridge.

Between twelve at night and five in the morning all the pontoons and beams were fortunately brought down; and at half past five the bridge was completed. Thirty Chasseurs of the corps of Aspre and fifty volunteers of Nadasty were carried over in a boat to the opposite side, and remained at the foot of the rugged mountain, on which the castle of Trezzo is built, without making the least noise.

The bridges being finished, Major Retzer, with six companies of the above-mentioned Chasseurs and one regiment of Russian Cossacks passed the Adda: one battalion of Nadasty, two of Esterhazy, and the fourth Bannat battalion then passed the river, under the command of Col. Bideskuti, and fell upon the enemy in and behind Trezzo.

The French, who considered the building of this bridge impossible, had not the least notice thereof. The above brigade was followed by the seventh Hussars and two Cossack regiments. The enemy was driven back as far as Pozzo, where Field Marshal Lieut. Ott, whose whole division crossed the river, fell upon that of the enemy commanded by Gen. Grenier, which was on the point of advancing against General Vukassowich at Brivio.

The battle was very obstinate; the enemy took post between Pozzo and Brivio, where it was most vigorously attacked.

The enemy, who in the mean time had drawn reinforcements from Victor's division, was on the point of turning the Imperial right wing, and the Bannat battalion had already begun to give way, when Gen. Chasteller led up the two Grenadier battalions Pers and Stentoch, which formed the head of Field Marshal Lieut. Zoph's division, just then coming up against the enemy.

The Battalion Pers having attacked in front, suffered considerably; but the Stentoch battalion, with two squadrons of Hussars of Archduke Joseph's regiment, under the command of Captain Kirchner, led on by Lieut. Bokarme of the engineers (to the sound of military music), fell on the enemy's left flank, which was totally routed; and the Hussars, having broken through the French, made 300 prisoners, and cut 200 to pieces.

The village of Pozzo was carried sword in hand. The enemy, in the mean time, had received reinforcement, and marched his troops up in order in the road that leads from Baprio to Milan, but was again attacked, and Major Retzer with the Na-

dasty battalion, took Baprio, and made 200 prisoners.

The enemy was pursued ; and near Gergonzollo the French general Beker, and 30 wounded Officers, were taken prisoners.

At the same time General Melas marched against Cassano, and battered the entrenchments across the Ritorto canal with twelve-pounders and howitzers ; and, as the French fell back, caused a flying bridge to be thrown over the Canaldi Ritorto. First Lieutenant of the Pioneers, Count Kinski, completed it in spite of the heavy fire of the enemy. Gen. Melas immediately ordered the Reisky's regiment against the entrenchments which covered the bridge, which, with three cannons, was carried with so much rapidity, that the bridge, which had been set on fire by the French, was saved by our troops.

Gen. Melas crossed the Adda with his whole column ; and the same evening marched to Gergonzollo, and the next day early (28th), to Milan.

The two divisions Frohlich and Ott advanced to Milan on the 28th ; the right, under General Rosemberg, passed the Adda at Brivio on the 27th ; but General Vukassowich, who had already passed the river, formed the advanced guard, met with a division of French under General Serrurier, at Bertero, which, after a most obstinate engagement, was beaten, and forced to capitulate. The whole corps laid down its arms ; the Officers were permitted to return to France on their parole, and the privates remained prisoners of war.

After this affair, General Vukassowich marched to Como, and the Russians to the right of Milan.

This battle (which has taken the surname of *the Adda*) cost the French 6,000 men in killed and wounded, 5,400 prisoners (amongst whom were three generals) and 80 pieces of cannon; the Austro Russian army took 14 standards. The loss on the part of the allies was stated at 3,000 killed and wounded.

In the plan and execution of this attack, Suworow discovered all that presence of mind and promptitude, for which he had long been celebrated, and which are the first requisites in a great general. His distribution of the several divisions under his command was admirable; every corps seemed to be the best fitted for the service which it was appointed to perform; his knowledge of the talents and qualities of the several General Officers appeared to be as perfect as if they had all served under him for years; his orders were given with brevity and precision, with dignity and solemnity; his name inspired confidence in the army and struck the enemy with terror. In his official account of the engagement he gives great praise to several of the Austrian and Russian officers, but particularly to Generals *Melas* and *Chasteller*. Gen. *Melas*, with his division, carried the intrenchments on the opposite bank, and penetrated into *Caffano*, in spite of a most obstinate and destructive resistance; and, it was owing to the skill and intrepidity of Gen. *Marquis Chasteller* that the passage at *Trezzo*, which the enemy thought impossible, was so successfully effected.

Nor was the battle of *the Adda* more glorious in itself than important in its consequences. *Moreau*, with his defeated and disheartened army, passed the *Telino*, abandoned even the *Novarese* and the valley

of Sesia, and continued his retreat, 'till, on the 1<sup>st</sup> of May, he took shelter under the walls of Turin, the capital of Piedmont, and also the capital of the King of Sardinia's dominions.

Milan, which was the *seat of government of the Cisalpine Republic*,\* and which was only fifteen

\* As this ephemeral Republic has been much talked about in America, it may not be amiss to give some account of it here. It comprehended, besides the whole of Austrian Lombardy, the territories of the Duke of Modena, the Papal provinces of Ferrara, Bologna, and Romagna. It was bounded on the north by Switzerland, the Tyrol and part of the states of Venice; on the east by the Adriatic Sea and Austria Proper; on the south by the territories of the Pope, by Tuscany, the Mediterranean, and Parma; on the west by Parma and the states of the King of Sardinia. It contained 3,567 square miles, and 3,447,384 inhabitants. The country that this base usurpation extended over, is, in every respect, one of the finest in all Europe. The mountebanks of Paris, according to their custom, gave to it five directors, two councils, and other bands of vagabond rulers. They divided it into twenty departments, as follows :

DEPARTMENTS.	CAPITALS.	DEPUTIES.
1 Olone	Milan	15
2 Verbano	Varese	12
3 Lario	Como	12
4 Delle Montagne	Lecco	12
5 Tesino	Pavia	12
6 Adda	Lodi & Crema	12
7 Serio	Bergamo	15
8 Adda & Oggio	<i>Undetermined</i>	12
9 Mella	Brescia	15
10 Benaco	Desenzano	9
11 Upper Po	Cremona	15
12 Mincio	Mantua	9
13 Crostolo	Reggio	12
14 Appennines	Massa Carara	6
15 Panaro	Modena	15

miles from the hostile armies, waited with the utmost anxiety, the event of the battle of *the Adda*, on which its fate, as well as that of the whole Republic of which it was the capital, evidently depended. As soon, therefore, as certain fugitives brought the news to the city, the vile creatures of France, the Lombard Republicans, the Directory and Legislative Representatives were seen making off, like thieves, out of the gate towards Piedmont, while the honest and loyal part of the inhabitants were rushing to the opposite road to receive the Imperial troops. Here shouts of joy and blessings resounded all the way.

Three years before, when *Maffena*, who then commanded the van of *Buonaparte's* army, approached this city, he was met by a band of traitors and rebels, who hailed him as the harbinger of *liberty*. Very different was the procession that went out to welcome *Suworow*. The Archbishop of Milan, who, like his predecessor *St. Ambrose*, had scorned to abandon his flock to despair amidst the barbarians, was at the head, followed by his clergy, and the old Magistracy who were so horribly oppressed on the invasion of the French. They met the Austro-Russian army at Cressenzago, and delivered to Su-

---

DEPARTMENTS.	CAPITALS.	DEPUTIES.
16 Reno	Bologna	16
17 Upper Padua	Cento	6
18 Lower Po	Ferrara	12
19 Lamone	Faenza	12
20 Rubico	Rimini	12

---

worow the keys of the city, but could not find language sufficient to express their joy and their gratitude. From Cressenzago to Milan, which was three miles, the way was so crowded that the army could scarcely advance. From the streets, the doors, the windows, the house-tops of the city, the conqueror was saluted with continued shouts of "Long live religion, the Emperor, and Suworow!" Such were the lamentations, which, after a three year's trial, the loss of republicanism excited in Lombardy!

Very few excesses were committed. Some houses belonging to the leading Revolutionists, such as *Serbelloni* at Milan, and *Campara* at Brescia, were plundered, and that more by the populace than by the troops. At the same time that an amnesty was published, a proclamation, as wise as necessary, was issued forbidding all reprisals, all violence against the partizans of the annihilated system. The amnesty, however, could not be, nor was it, extended to the principal authors of the public calamities, to those who before the French irruption and to the very last day persisted in preferring the interests of the Directory of Paris to those of their fellow subjects, and in being the accomplices and executioners of the oppression under which Lombardy groaned. Some persons of ill repute were arrested for the sake of policy, but most of the great criminals and appointed agents had followed the French army to Turin.

The Cisalpine Directory was composed of five fellows named *Savoldi*, *Alessandri*, *Testi*, *Lamberti*, and *Adelasio*. Their brethren of Paris had inserted them in the National Almanack of France, *next to the*

*Emperor of Russia.* One of these renegadoes thought it best to purchase his pardon by returning to the frontiers, where, by consent of the Minister of Finance and some other members of the administration, he gave up the secret repositories and archives of the run-away Government.

Turin offering no security sufficiently stable to this horde of wandering dignitaries and their dependents, to the vultures, agents, and *constituted* robbers who followed the French army, the caravans of them made their way by Mount Cenis, flowing into France, that common sewer of the Revolutionary filth of Europe, and into which the refuse of Switzerland, Italy, Ireland, and Germany, have been continually pouring. A spectator of this discharge of corruption tells us, that no pencil can paint the band, pursued in imagination by the Cossacks, clambering over the precipices of the Alps, a-foot, on mules, on asses, and litters; nor the medley of Directors, Legislators, Ambassadors, Secretaries, Prostitutes, Players, Deserters, San-Culottes, Usurers, and dethroned Delegates, here cursed and there laughed at by the people who were witnesses of this new flight to *Paradise*, consoling themselves for their miseries, with imprecations, and loading one another with censure.

At the end of eight days, there remained not, in Milan, a vestige of the Republican government. The Executive Directory, the Ministers of War, of Finance and of Foreign Affairs, the Council of Elders, the Council of Youngers, the Committees of Safety and of Secrecy, the Departmental Administrators and Municipal Officers, the Revolutionary Tribunals and National Guards, the Requisitions,

Tricolored flags, Cockades, Passports, Certificates of Civism, Forced Loans, Jack-Ketches, Liberty-Caps and Guillotines,—all were vanished like the phantoms of a dream ! The Imperial government was re-established in all its parts. The armorial bearings of *the apes of the apes* of France, yet new and fresh, gave place to the Royal Eagle, and the Cisalpine soldiers, deserted by the rebel chiefs, enlisted under the banners of their lawful sovereign.

Thus perished, after an existence of three years, that wonderful creation of Buonaparte's genius, the mighty Cisalpine Republic ! That state, in which all malignant republicans hoped to see another permanent example of successful rebellion, was vanquished by Suworow in one week ; and the divans of rebels, who had tricked themselves out in robes and badges, and who had treated nobles and princes with disdain, were, in a few hours, reduced to a handfull of vagabonds, by whose flight Italy was purified, and the Republican hordes at Paris augmented.

In the mean time the fortresses left behind, in the hands of the French, fell, one after another, before the Imperial arms. On the 30th of April fort Orci Nuovo opened its gates. Peschiera, with a garrison of 1,500 men, capitulated with General Kray on the 5th of May ; and Pizzighitone surrendered on the 10th of the same month to Gen. Kaim. In the capitulation for the surrender of Peschiera, the French urged very strenuously that none of the inhabitants should be called to account for their political or religious opinions and principles, or for having *served in the French army* ; but this condition Gen. Kray absolutely refused to grant.

Beyond the Tesino, the nothern part of Piedmont,

from that river to the Doria Baltea, which descends from the Duchy of Aosta, Novara poorly fortified, Vercelli and Ivrea still worse so, the higher countries bordering on the Lake of Como and Lake Major, and the intermediate Swiss Bailliwicks, were delivered. Parties were pushed on from Ivrea to Chivazzo, to within five leagues of Turin, and to the right of the Po.

To the left, Prince *Hohenzollern* and General *Klenau* overran the Duchy of Parma and the Modenese : Reggio, whose civism was distinguished by *Buonaparte*, and which had embraced the Revolution with peculiar ardour, Reggio, after the battle of the *Adda* hastened to send its keys and deputies ; and the cries of *Viva la Religione ! Viva l'Imperatore !* succeeded to those of *Viva l'Equalita !*

In all these different countries, transports of joy, mingled with those of resentment against the Revolutionists, who were ironically called *Patriots*. At Pavia several of them were not able to escape the popular fury : they would all have fallen by the vengeance of the people, had they not been protected by those soldiers, whom three months before they spoke of with insolent contempt. This inevitable and natural resentment broke out particularly in the Swiss Bailliwicks : that of Sugano did not wait for the arrival of the Austrians to drive out the French, and to exercise a bloody retaliation upon them. In a word, the predictions pronounced three years past of the fate reserved by the Italians for their oppressors, their institutes, their proselites, and their insignia of rebellion, impiety, and anarchy, were accomplished. This was the ninth time that the French thus expiated their conquests beyond the Alps.

These general insurrections, which in such cases were indeed become *the most sacred of duties*, powerfully concurred with the rapid march of the Allies to hasten the flight and disorder of the French. They had no time to save their magazines, to strip the evacuated towns, or carry off their stores of ammunition and other effects, which were abandoned to the conqueror. At Novara, by the collusion of one of the Milanese Directors and the Treasurers, General *Vukassowich* discovered the chest of the Cisalpine Republic, containing seven million livres of the country in cash.

This happy change was owing to the wise policy no less than to the military skill and bravery of *Suworow*, who, after having, by his arms, struck terror to the hearts of the Republicans, issued the following proclamation.

### ITALIAN NATIONS!

Arm, and unite under the banner of him who fights for God and Religion, and you will triumph over a perfidious enemy. The army of his Majesty the Emperor and King fight the French and shed their own blood in defence of our most holy Religion, and to restore to you your possessions and your ancient government. Were not the French perpetually demanding enormous sums of money? Did they not exact extraordinary requisitions of you? And, what to fathers of families is still more cruel, did they not tear your children from you at the chimerical names of Liberty and Equality, to make them fight against the troops of your legitimate sovereign, of a father who loves you, of the most ardent protector of our holy Religion? Be comforted, Nations! There is a God who watches over you, and armies that defend you. Look at this host of soldiers: another army is sent by the Emperor of Russia, the ally of yours. See here the victorious army of your Emperor; see on all sides considerate Nations full of enthusiasm co-operating to put an end to this

bloody struggle. An immense number of noble warriors are come to deliver Italy. Fear nothing; the armies are fighting against the French Republic in order to restore your laws, re-establish religion, and revive public and private tranquillity, by delivering you from the yoke under which you have groaned for three years past. The faithful servants of religion shall be reinstated in their offices and property. But, mark! --- If there be found among you a being perfidious enough to bear arms against his sovereign, or to favour the enterprises of the French Republic---such a traitor shall without consideration of situation, birth, rank, employment or condition, be shot, and his property all confiscated from his family. Your wisdom, Italian Nations! gives every reason to hope that, knowing the justice of our cause, you will not reduce us to the necessity of putting these rigorous measures into execution, but that you will give us every possible proof of loyalty and gratitude to a Sovereign so gracious to you.

(Signed)

SUWOROW.

The writer of this address was certainly better acquainted with the genius of the Italians, than *Buonaparte's* poets and orators were. The end, the motives, the duties, the crimes and punishment, are stated unambiguously. *There is a God who watches over you, and armies that defend you!*—This is a different kind of eloquence from the impious rhodomontades by which the Generals of the Directory terrified the Nations.

Among the measures of *Suworow*, there was one which was highly characteristic of a just and noble mind, and which effectually put a stop to the cruel persecution of the French Refugees, the victims of their duty and attachment, shedding their blood in company with the Confederate Armies; while they were excluded from the laws of war, not admitted to be exchanged, and, if taken prisoners, murdered in the uniform of the Powers who were at war with

their oppressors. The princes of *Lorraine*, the Princes *Charles* and *Victor of Rohan*, Colonels *de Carneville*, *de Gorger*, and many others were serving with glory in the Imperial Army. In order to insure those rights which cannot be denied the commonest soldier, *Suworow* intimated to General *Moreau* that he would order 100 French prisoners to be shot for every emigrant, serving under him, against whom the decrees of the Republic should be put in execution.

During this general wreck of republicanism, *Moreau* was very awkwardly situated. He left Turin, whither he had been driven by his defeat of the 27th of April, and posted himself about the fifth of May, in the angle of the two rivers between *Valenza* and *Alexandria*, with a view of protecting the fortress of *Tortona*, which has always been regarded by the French as the key of Italy. But, from the same motive that the French wished to preserve this fortress, *Suworow* wished to wrest it from them. This he effected by marching out, on the ninth of May with his whole army, and overawing *Moreau*, while he sent detachments forward against the fortress. The Imperial troops under General *Melas* and the Marquis *Casteller*, entered *Tortona*, the French garrison retiring to the citadel. The loyal inhabitants received their deliverers with every demonstration of joy. The town was illuminated the whole night, and the next day high mass and *te deum* were sung in those churches, within whose sacred walls the impious Republicans had committed every species of abomination. The citadel, which contained a garrison of seven hundred men, was immediately besieged.

Unable to stop the progress of the Imperial arm?

for a single hour, even when an object so great as Tortona was at stake, it was no wonder that Moreau soon found it necessary to retreat still nearer to the Alps. Before the end of May, he abandoned his position between the Po, the Tanaro, and Bormida, and retreated to Coni. He was compelled to make this movement, not by any considerable defeat of the army immediately under his command : the step was the necessary consequence of several battles, which, though not general, always weakened the republican army. Besides, the manœuvres of the enemy threatened daily to hem him in and surround him ; the Piedmontese were taking up arms against him in his rear, while, in front, the indefatigable activity of Suworow, gave him not a moment's rest.

The towns and citadels, in the mean time, which remained in the hands of the French, were daily surrendering to the Imperial arms. The castle of *Milan* capitulated on the 24th of May ;\* the cita-

\* The republicans first entered Milan in the month of May, 1796, and, in May 1799, it was entirely delivered of them ; but, they made dreadful havoc during their stay. Besides disfiguring many valuable monuments of antiquity, and destroying others ; that Prince of plunderers, Buonaparte, sent off a great number of manuscripts, paintings, &c. &c. to Paris. Could the thieves of all countries be collected together into an army, Buonaparte would be a fit commander for them.

Milan is a very ancient city, and not more ancient than famed in history. It was built in the year 395 *after the building of Rome* ; it has been besieged forty-five times, twenty-three times taken, and four times almost entirely destroyed. It was rased to the ground by the Emperor Frederick Barbarossa, in 1158, for its rebellion. Notwithstanding all this devastation, it rose again out of its ruins, and was as populous in the sixteenth century, that, in the year

del of Ferrara followed on the 25th and Ravenna on the 27th. Bologna, where there was a considerable revolutionary party with a French regiment, was attacked by General Klenau, who had before taken Ferrara. *Mantua*, therefore, was now the only fortress of great importance that the allies had left behind them in the hands of the French.

In Piedmont, Casal and Valenza surrendered without resistance, and, on the 27th of May, the right of the Imperial army entered Turin, the gates being opened by the inhabitants and the French garrison having retired to the citadel. Thus was the capital of another Christian Prince, once more rescued from the tyranny of the barbarians. The republicans did indeed, after they retired to the citadel, begin to play upon the town; but the fatal effects of this last effort of their fiend-like malice was prevented, by a communication made to them by the order of Suworow, who assured them, that unless they immediately ceased their fire on the city, no quarter should be granted to themselves. They remembered the history of *Ismael*, and they had the prudence to cease.\*

---

1524 according to report, 300,000 persons were carried off by the plague (without the assistance of "mercurial purges" and, "bleeding almost to death"): at present it contains about 170,000 inhabitants. It has twenty two gates, sixty-one churches, besides many other magnificent buildings. The city is fortified by a rampart and wall, and has a citadel consisting of a castle surrounded with six bastions and outworks.

\* It is worthy of observation, that the republicans have always been most insolent to those, who were foolish enough to treat them with gentleness. *Suworow* knew their dispositions well.

There remained to be reduced the citadels of Turin, Alexandria and Tortona. The first a most excellent fortress, with three thousand men, and an ample supply of ammunition and provisions. Coni, whither Moreau was retired, was capable of defence; but from Coni to the frontiers of France, there were no fortifications, except Savona and Montalban.

The despots of Paris had not, however, been idle all this time. They made great and astonishing exertions to re-inforce the army of Moreau; the greater part of the body, which was stationed towards Nice, under the command of *Angereau* was sent to join him; two whole divisions were sent him from the army in Switzerland; and the *conscripts* were hastened away from the interior of France, in their wooden shoes and the bayonet at their backs.

The remaining hope of the Directory, was, to assemble by successive re-inforcements a body sufficient to command the attention of Suworow's army (now greatly reduced by the detachments he had made from it), 'till Macdonald could form a junction with Moreau, or 'till by the rapid marches, which Macdonald was ordered to make, Suworow should be placed between two fires.

Some supposed, that Macdonald, who was advancing through Tuscany, would proceed with all haste to Genoa, by the way of Lucca, Massa, Carrara, and Sarsana; but the plan was more bold. Macdonald, having been joined by the division of Victor, instead of attempting to join Moreau by passing through the Genoese territory, turned off from the sea shore, and having left most of his artillery

and heavy baggage in the states of the Church, pushed on with great rapidity through Modena and Parma, in order to form a junction with Moreau in the Tortonesc, whence they were to cross the Po together and march to the relief of *Mantua*.

This plan was not injudicious, its execution was committed to men of great skill and of undoubted bravery, and, had it succeeded, the Imperialists would not only have lost all their conquests in the Cisalpine Republic, but would, themselves, have been placed in a very dangerous situation. But, it was completely frustrated by the superior genius, the watchfulness, and the unexampled promptitude of Suworow.

Moreau's head quarters were at *Coni*, between which and *Genoa* he preserved a communication. Suworow was at *Turin*, from which place, in order to aid the loyal *Piedmontese* and to prevent Moreau from receiving succours across the *Alps*, he had pushed on his advanced posts to *Suza*, *Affietta*, and *Pignerola*, and had detached a party to take possession of the valleys of *Vaudois*, where the French had raised the people in their cause. The advanced guard of his army extended to *Cherasco* and its neighbourhood. He was making preparations for the siege of the *Citadel* of *Turin*, while he overlooked and protected the blockades of the citadels of *Alexandria* and *Tortona*. Numerous, however as were the objects that demanded his attention, the motions of *Macdonald* did not escape his watchful eye; and, though he had little expectation of the republican's attempting what it afterwards appeared he had in view, yet the Field Marshal took care to station Major General *Hohenzoilern*,

with a considerable body of troops, at Modena, and Lieut: General Ott, with ten thousand men, at Fort Novo, between Parma and Placenza, while the body, under Gen. Klenau, at Bologna, was ordered to come up, and act as a corps of reserve to either of these that should be attacked.

Suworow, as soon as he was apprized of the route that Macdonald had taken, went from Turin to Alexandria, where he assembled his army, on the 15th of June, in order to meet him, give him battle, and prevent any junction of his army with that of Moreau.

In the mean time, Macdonald, the celerity of whose March was astonishing, arrived at Modena, on the 12th, attacked the advanced corps under Gen. Hohenzollern and obliged him to re-cross the Po with great precipitation and considerable loss, while his superior force held Gen. Klenau in perfect inactivity. From Modena he pushed on with incredible speed through Reggio and Parma, and, on the 17th, presented himself before Fort Novo, where he fell upon the corps under Gen. Ott, who had received orders not to weaken his force by a hazardous battle, but rather give way, and retreat towards the main army, which was advancing to his support.

Hitherto the active and daring Macdonald had met with no obstacle. Moreau, too, had quitted Coni, and by rapid marches, was approaching his countrymen; so that, on the 17th, the Republican armies were but a few leagues from each other. Macdonald having proceeded with so much facility, having driven corps after corps before him, seems to have been intoxicated with his success; for, when he

law the ten thousand men under General Ott retreat so hastily from Fort Novo, with little or no resistance, he is said to have written to Moreau in the following words: “*La victoire est encore fidèle aux armes des républicains: il ne reste plus qu'une petite éspace entre nous, et les routes sont belles.*”\* Moreau replied to the bearer of the letter: “*C'est vrai, qu'il n'y reste qu'une petite éspace entre nous; mais dans cette éspace il se trouve Suworow, qui vaut bien une mauvaise route.*†” But Moreau had been at the battle of the Adda!

Just after Macdonald had driven in General Ott, and had crossed the Trebia, which opened to him the way to Tortona, where Moreau was already arrived, he was met by Suworow. There ended his career! There he found, as Moreau had foretold, “an obstacle full as formidable as a bad road.” The gulph between Lazarus and Dives was not more dangerous and terrific, than the space which now remained between the republican armies.

The Field-Marshal arrived, with the vanguard, at St. Giovanni,‡ at the moment that Macdonald was making up to it, in pursuit of General Ott. Suworow, though his troops were greatly fatigued, immediately rushed on to the support of General

\* “Victory is still faithful to the arms of the Republicans: “there remains but a little space between us, and the roads “are excellent.”

† “It is true, there is now but a little space between us; “but in that space is Suworow, an obstacle full as formidable “as a bad road.”

‡ A Castle and small fortress in the Dutchy of Parma, ten miles from Placenza, or Piacentia.

Ott, with his vanguard, under Prince Porkrazion, and two regiments of Cossacks, the latter he led in person, and commenced a most furious and destructive attack, in which he was soon after supported by his infantry, on the left wing of the French, who, after an obstinate resistance, were driven across the little river Tidone, leaving one thousand men killed, a great number wounded, and four hundred prisoners. In the mean time, the right wing and flank of the republicans were attacked by the Russian General Prince Gorzakow, while General Ott advanced against the centre. The French were repulsed every where, and were all driven over the Tidone before sun-set.

Night suspended, but was very far from putting an end to the battle. Macdonald retreated to the Trebia, on the left bank of which he formed his line of battle during the night, which Suworow's army passed on the left bank of the Tidone, six or seven miles from the Trebia, with which it runs for some distance, in a line nearly parallel.

The troops, on both sides, were cruelly fatigued. Suworow, therefore, did not put his army in motion 'till late the next morning, knowing that the additional energy, which his troops would receive from proper refreshment, would more than over-balance any advantage of position, that the enemy could derive from a few hours delay.

It was ten o'clock in the morning of the eighteenth, when the Imperial army broke up from the left bank of the Tidone, forded the river in three columns, and advanced towards the enemy; but, the country, though very flat, being intersected by numerous hedges, rows of vines, and deep ditches, it

was with no small difficulty, that Prince Porkrazion, with the advanced guard, reached the French left wing by one o'clock. Suworow's army consisted of seventeen battalions of Russians, twelve battalions of Austrian dragoons, and three regiments of Cossacks, besides the Austrian division under General Ott, making in all about 30,000 men; so that the two armies were equal as to numbers, and that of Macdonald was composed entirely of French troops, one Polish legion excepted. The French had indeed, the advantage of having chosen their ground; but, as the country was perfectly level, and as there were neither redoubts nor intrenchments, this advantage was very inconsiderable.

Now, then, the long-contested question respecting the pretended *superiority of republican courage* was to be fairly and finally decided. On the one side were *Imperialists*, led by a *nobelman* not more famed for his valour than his loyalty and piety; on the other, were *Republicans*, commanded by a *fans-culotte*, bold and persevering, inured to treason, sacrilege and blood. The strength of the combatants was equal, and great was the stake; for, on the issue of the battle it depended, not only whether the laurel should grace the brow of Suworow, or of Macdonald; but, whether loyalty, or treason, should prosper, and whether Italy, the seat of the arts and the garden of the world, should, in future, consist of Christian Kingdoms and Principalities, or of base and impious republics.

Suworow put his right wing under the command of the Russian General Rosenburg, his left under that of the Austrian General Melas, and the centre under that of the Russian General Foerster. The

Russian Major General Prince Porkrazion commanded the van guard, and Prince Lichtenstein the reserve. Prince Porkrazion had the honour of beginning the attack. He marched up to Macdonald's left wing, and, amidst a shower of balls and grape-shot, rushed in at the head of his infantry with fixed bayonets, while his Cossacks turned its flank. The French retreated, leaving prisoners in the hands of the Prince, their adjutant-general, two Colonels, and six hundred men of the Polish legion, with one cannon and a pair of colours. Macdonald, seeing the situation of his left wing, dispatched to its assistance a strong reinforcement, to oppose which General Rosenberg added the whole division of Sweykowsky to the van guard of Prince Porkrazion. The attack was renewed, and the French, after a very stout resistance, and considerable loss in killed and taken, were driven across the Trebia.

In the mean time, the centre of the Imperialists, under General Foerster, with its light vanguard, fell in with the vanguard of the French, which was composed of one thousand horse and a regiment of infantry, and was stationed about half way between the Tidone and the Trebia. This vanguard was attacked and driven back in great confusion on the centre of the French line, which was then attacked by the Russians with charged bayonets, and forced across the Trebia; but, Macdonald, being resolved, if possible, to regain his position, and having speedily re-inforced his centre with several battalions and a strong division of cavalry, broke through the ranks of the Austrian infantry, and, with a body of ten thousand men, reached the left bank,

where he was, however, met with such unshaken courage by the Russian column, who coolly waited his approach, and then threw themselves on him with fixed bayonets, that he was obliged again to take shelter on the other side of the river.

Nor was the left wing of the Imperialists less active, less brave or less successful. General Melas, having under him the Austrian divisions of Generals Ott and Froelich, attacked the French with great intrepidity, and, though he had to overcome intrepidity equal to his own, he finally succeeded in driving the enemy from the left bank, but without following him across the river.

Thus terminated the second day of this well-fought battle, without any thing very decisive. Macdonald's whole army had, indeed, been obliged to retreat over the Trebia ; but the ground he had lost was not much, and his new position was full as good as his former one. To attack him the Imperialists must cross the river, and, in so doing must expose themselves to his fire. His loss had, it is true, been considerable ; but his assailants also had met with loss, and the prisoners they had taken from him required troops to guard them. Besides, Macdonald was in hourly expectation of the arrival of a legion of Ligurians, under the command of General la Poipe, who were coming from the mountains of Genoa, above Bobbio, and were to fall upon the right flank of the Imperial army. He, moreover, entertained strong hopes, and not without some reason, that Moreau would, during the next day, come up and fall upon the rear of Suworow, while he engaged him in front.

The Field Marshal did not pass the night without

anxiety. He had left the Count of Bellegarde to blockade in his absence, the citadels of Tortona and Alexandria, and to oppose as long as possible, the progress of Moreau, should he advance ; but, as the force under the Count was very inconsiderable, and, as the strength of Moreau's army was unknown, the gallant and persevering resistance of Macdonald, which had already prolonged the battle to an unexpected duration, could not fail to produce uneasy sensations in the mind of Suworow. During the night, he called his Generals together, and, after having stated to them their situation, and the difficulty they must expect to encounter, he took his leave of them with these impressive words : " To-morrow, gentlemen, remember, that on our swords will hang, our own honours, the glory of our Sovereigns, and the fate of Italy."

On the morning of the 19th, the troops of both armies were so fatigued, that the battle did not begin 'till nine o'clock. The lines were drawn up on the two banks of the Trebia, the Imperialists on the left bank and the French on the right. The river is nearly a mile wide from bank to bank. The intermediate space is an open sand divided by several streams, which were however, fordable in all parts. While the Allies were preparing to make an attack, the French began a most tremendous fire upon the whole line, and, advancing at the same time, with great celerity, against the village of Caffaleggio, they turned the right wing of the Russians, and obliged them, for some time to fall back ; but, at this instant, Prince Porkrazion fell upon their rear and flank, and made great havock amongst them. They did not, however, give up their object ; they repeatedly

renewed the attack upon the village, and were every time repulsed by the Russians. The whole left wing of Macdonald now made a furious attack upon the right of the Russians; the battle became uncommonly obstinate and bloody; General Dahlheim made the first impression upon the French, who, still undaunted, made a second attack, and though General Rosenberg broke through their whole line, this did not prevent them from rallying, and, with redoubled fury, commencing a third attack. The contest was here at last decided by the advance of Prince Porkrazion, who, at the head of his Cossacs, threw himself amidst the French with irresistible impetuosity, and produced a confusion of which General Rosenberg took advantage and completed their defeat.

To the left, the attack of the French was equally violent on General Melas. They crossed the river with two thousand horse and a strong column of infantry, detaching, at the same time, a second column along the Po, in order to turn the left flank of Gen. Ott. But both columns were repulsed. Prince Lichtenstein, without considering his superior force, met the vanguard of the cavalry, attacked it, and driving it back upon the infantry, broke the line. The French, however, rallied again, and were again charged by the Prince, while the main body of the Austrians, with General Melas at their head, came up, and finding the enemy already in confusion, drove them back with very great loss in killed, wounded and taken.

But, it was for the centre of the Imperialists, composed of Russians, and commanded by General Foeller, that Macdonald reserved his most furious

assault. Opposite this part of the army he had erected some considerable batteries, from which he kept up a constant and heavy fire, while he in person advanced across the river with his centre column consisting of the flower of his army. The Russians, without firing a gun, waited his approach, with fixed bayonets, 'till he reached the left bank of the river, when the whole column, led by Suworow in person with General Focrster by his side, darted forward upon his vanguard, which, immediately recoiling, threw the main body into confusion. The carnage that ensued was dreadful; but, Macdonald, whom nothing seemed to dishearten, and who still hoped to see Moreau arrive, rallied his troops and returned to the attack. He was again repulsed and thrown into confusion, and again he rallied and renewed the fight. He was repulsed again, and was again endeavouring to rally, but finding it impossible, he attempted to retreat in some order; but in this also his endeavours were useless. The French fled in the greatest disorder and were pursued 'till the close of evening by the victorious Suworow, who strewed the sands of the Trebia with the bodies of four thousand republicans. This blow put an end to the memorable and obstinate *battle of the Trebia*. The French were once more driven across the river, and night once more sheltered them from the pursuit of their enemies.

Macdonald, who had, at last, determined on a retreat, did not wait for the sun to light him on his way. He decamped in the night, sending off the division of Victor towards the Val de Taro to keep open his communication with Genoa, and hastening,

with the rest of his army, across the Duchy of Modena, towards Tuscany. Suworow did not, like General Howe after the battle of the White Plains, desist from a pursuit, saying that *there was enough done for one time*. No; he formed his army into flying columns, the Russians on the right and the Austrians on the left, and following the fleeing enemy with all possible speed as far as the river Nura, where the right column overtook their rear guard near St. Giorgio, made prisoners of half the seventeenth brigade, and about one thousand men belonging to the regiment formerly the famous Auvergne.

The pursuit was continued, on the 21st, as far as Fiorenzola. General Ott reached Borgo St. Tonio the same day, and, the next, he pursued the French to Parma, where General Hohenzollern had already arrived, and found several of Macdonald's wounded men left behind. On the 22nd the army rested at Fiorenzola, whence, however, in consequence of intelligence received from his rear, Suworow hastened back, by forced marches, towards Tortona.

The Ligurian Legion, consisting of 3,000 men, which Macdonald had, for three days, so anxiously expected, had approached near to the scene of action; but being met by General Betetzyk, who had been detached by the Field-Marshal for that purpose, they immediately retreated towards Bobbio, were pursued by General Betetzyk, with two regiments of Cossacks, and were all dispersed except 500 killed and 103 taken prisoners. But, Moreau had, during the absence of Suworow, left Coni and advanced, with an army of 15,000 men, into the

plains between Tortona and Alexandria. On the 20th, he attacked the Austrian corps under the Count of Bellegarde, who had been left by the Field Marshal to blockade those two citadels. The Count's force was very inconsiderable; he succeeded, however, though with the severe loss of 2,100 men in killed, wounded and prisoners, in keeping Moreau at bay for four days, at the end of which, the latter, hearing of the defeat of Macdonald, and fearing the return of Suworow, began his retreat through Novi and over the Bochetta, towards Gavi and Genoa, and had the good luck to be out of reach before the Field Marshal arrived.

In the mean time, the rear of Macdonald's army, was harrassed by the divisions under Generals Ott, Hohenzollern and Klenau, who sent in great numbers of prisoners. The division of Victor was compelled to abandon its position in the val de Taro, and to take refuge in the Genoese territory; and Macdonald himself, driven from a position he had taken behind the Secchia,\* pursued by the Imperialists, harrassed by continual insurrections of the people in Tuscany, betrayed by the Cisalpine General *La Hoz*, whom he had left in that country, and menaced with the approach of a corps of Russians just landed near Ancona, at last submitted to abandon a country disfigured by his crimes. He led off the miserable remains of his army, now reduced to about 8,000 men, first towards Leghorn, and thence along the states of Genoa and the county of Nice, whence most of his skeleton divisions formed a junction with Moreau, while he himself, as a reward for

---

\* A river on the confines of Tuscany.

his bravery, his perseverance, his incredible toils and sufferings, and his unshaken fidelity to his trust, was neglected, if not disgraced by his masters! Such has ever been the *gratitude* of Republics.

Suworow was now reaping the fruits of his victory, amidst the admiration, the applauses, and benedictions of the people for whom he was combating. The loss of the Imperialists, in the battle of the Trebia, consisted of 1 Lieutenant Colonel, 36 Officers of the staff and commissioned Officers, and 3,250 men, *killed*; and of three Generals, 3 Colonels, 1 Lieutenant-Colonel, 187 staff and commissioned Officers, and 4,300 men, *wounded*; making in all 7,781 men. The French lost, in *killed*, 6,200 men, of all ranks; in *prisoners taken in the field of battle*, 5,087; *wounded*, made prisoners, 7,183, amongst whom were 502 Officers of the staff and commissioned Officers, 8 Colonels, 2 Generals of Division (*Olivier* and *Ruska*), and 2 Generals of Brigade (*Salm* and *Cambrecy*); making in the whole 18,470 men.

But, it was neither the prisoners taken, nor the numbers slain, it was neither the duration of the contest nor the valour displayed, that gave the most eclat to the action on the Trebia. Battles, which, though long and bloody, are followed by no important and durable consequences, require the assistance of books to preserve them from oblivion; while others, which, like those of *Blenheim*, *Pultawa*, *Hastings*, and *Agincourt*, decide the fate of a campaign, or change the dynasty of an empire, are immortalized without the aid of historians or poets. This is the destiny of the *battle of the Trebia*; for, it at once decided the fate of the campaign and of Italy.

The attempt of the French Generals was, indeed, an act of boldness approaching to temerity, but their plan was vast, and most admirable concerted. If Suworow had been two days later, Moreau and Macdonald would have formed a junction, and, with an army of 50,000 men, would not only have obtained a reinforcement of 10,000 more, by relieving Mantua, but they would, by the same stroke, have completely cut off all communication between the armies of Kray and Suworow, and would have had it in their power to march against, and to defeat, whichever they chose. Again, if Suworow had had five thousand troops less, if he had not previously received a reinforcement from General Kray contrary to the secret orders of the Aulic Council, or if Moreau or the Ligurian Legion had come up during the battle, the consequence would have been still more fatal. So that, in whatever point it be viewed, it was the battle of the Trebia that purged Italy of Republicans, and restored seven Princes to their dominions.

After the battle of the Trebia, the Field-Marshal fixed his head quarters at Alexandria, where he covered the sieges of the citadel of that place and that of Tortona, and where, 'till the *battle of Novi*, he seemed to have little more to do than receive the pleasing details of the consequences of his victories and of his judicious arrangements. The first intelligence that arrived after his return, was that of the surrender of the citadel of *Turin*, which had capitulated, on condition of the garrison being sent to France to be exchanged for an equal number of Austrians, General Fiorella, the commandant of the garrison, and all his officers,

being kept as hostages for the fulfilment of the articles. Thus was this noble city, the capital of Piedmont and the King of Sardinia's dominions, once more cleared of its devastators.\* On the 30th

---

\* It was by the most atrocious perfidy, that the French, in Dec. 1798, got possession of this city. The timid Monarch of Sardinia had made sacrifice after sacrifice to the peace which he at last obtained; yet, while the Directory and Councils were making to him the most solemn protestations of friendship, their Generals, who pretended to be preparing for the evacuation of his dominion, secured all the passes to his capital, and seized on it in the midst of a profound security.

To describe the devastation, the horrid crimes, that succeeded this perfidious deed, is impossible. "The wretched "SOVEREIGN," says the Anti-Jacobin, "was not merely deprived of his throne, but subjected to insults and degradation which render life itself the dearest of purchases. When the ruffian General *Joubert* entered the Royal Palace at Turin, he addressed the fallen Monarch in language the most insolent and vulgar, and, echoing the brutal sentiments of his Republican masters, told him the time was come to put an end to his perfidious machinations, his infamous treachery, and his base ingratitude to the *Grande Nation*. He ordered him, in an authoritative tone, to quit the country, with his wife, without delay; but, as for that assassin, his brother (the DUKE D'AOSTA), he should remain, and be sent as a hostage, to France. Here fraternal affection arose superior to every other feeling in the breast of this unhappy prince; he begged, intreated, and implored for permission to take his brother with him into exile. *Joubert* remained inexorable. At length the King, forgetful of his dignity, and departing from that manliness of sentiment which dignifies misfortune, and palliates disgrace itself, burst into tears, and *threw himself at the feet* of this wretched upstart, this low, base reptile, engendered in the filth of the revolution, this miserable satellite of a regicidal Pentarchy, who, either from a momentary impulse of pity, foreign from his nature, or from the sudden adoption of a secret resolution to render by subsequent measures, his indulgence nugatory, d<sup>u</sup>gued

of June the French garrison of *Bologna* capitulated with General Klenau, and at the same time, the few sans-culottes that remained in *Florence*, retreated to *Leghorn*, where as they could escape no further, they capitulated. The insignificant garrisons, that had been left in different parts of *Tuscany* followed the example of their brother republicans, and laid down their arms, one after another; not, however, before they, and their predecessors, under Champaïnet and Macdonald had left the print of their rapacious and sacrilegious hands on that beautiful and happy country, and destroyed in six months, the fruit of forty years wise and paternal administration, which all the concessions, humiliations and sacrifices of the Grand Duke had not been able to preserve from their clutches. In the *States of the Church*, where, two months before, “nothing was “to be seen but scaffolds, ruins, famished inhabi-

---

to signify to the supplicating Monarch (but still preserving his tone of insolence and arrogance) his compliance with the request. The Royal Family, accordingly, prepared for their departure. As they entered the carriage, they were hailed with the tears and lamentations of an affectionate people;—for (will posterity believe it!) the Prince thus banished from his dominions by a foreign banditti was *beloved* by his subjects.” One would have thought, that this was enough to gratify even republican envy and malice; but, the savage *Joubert* (whom we shall soon see Suworow str tch dead upon the plain) was not yet content, he stripped the King and Queen of their money and jewels, and seized every thing valuable in the palace. The Royal Captives were conducted, through the Duchies of Milan and Modena, into *Tuscany*. On the 24th of February they embarked on board a Ragusian ship at *Leghorn*, whence a part of the English Squadron, which waited at a distance, conveyed them to the Island of *Sardinia*.

“ tants, the most horrible tyranny, all the crimes of avarice, oppression, revenge and despair ;” in the *States of the Church*, two months before ruled by an execrable republican banditti, who extorted the last crust from the peasant, and who answered the cries of hunger with the bayonet ; in these oppressed *States* there now remained only a small garrison in *Rome* (whence Champoinet had been recalled, and whence Macdonald had withdrawn a great part of the troops), a still smaller in *Ancona* and in *Civita Vecchia*. The republican troops in the interior were reduced to a few bands of roving thieves, who, for safety, depended upon their hiding-places rather than their arms. Lower down, in the *Neapolitan dominions*, affairs took a turn still more decided. Some remains of the Royal army having assembled in Calabria, with some of the peasants, marched under the brave *Cardinal Ruffo*, to the relief of Naples, soon after it was left by Macdonald. Just as the city had opened its gates on the 27th of June, in consequence of a capitulation, which the King afterwards refused to ratify because it stipulated a pardon for the traitor *Moliterno*, Lord Nelson, with his squadron arrived in the Bay, and the forts of St. Elmo, Capua, and Gaeta, being very soon recaptured, and the French sent home on parole, the King returned to his capital about the end of July, after having been exiled from it for the space of four months. The traitor *Moliterno* was swung from the yard-arm of a British frigate, and, before the end of July, the deliverance of the whole Kingdom of Naples was completed by the exertions of Admiral Nelson and Captain Trowbridge, with the sailors and marines under their command, aided by a

few slight detachments of Neapolitan, Russian, and British troops.

But had it not been for the glorious result of *the battle of the Trebia*, had Macdonald formed a junction with Moreau, or had the former defeated Suworow, instead of having his own army almost annihilated, the re-conquests of Naples, Tuscany, &c. would not have taken place; or, if they had, they would have been of short duration, and would only have tended to incense the Tyrants of France, who would, with their usual impudence, have termed them *rebellions*, and would have made them the pretext of new confiscations and murders. It was, then, to the battle of the Trebia that this long and rapid succession of happy events was to be attributed; it was that which revived the hopes and the courage of all honest men in Italy, and plunged half a million of miscreants into despair.\*

---

\* The wretches, which the French put into power in Italy are, and very properly, become objects of ridicule with all good men. Their fall is one of those acts of justice, which we may contemplate with sensations unmixed with pain. In their crime as well as in their punishment, they bear a strong resemblance to the Jews; the latter crucified the Author of Christianity, and the former endeavoured to destroy Christianity itself. Both are wandering over the face of the wide world, without a country to own them.—On this occasion I cannot help quoting a passage from a little poem, entitled, “*The Fall of Cisalpina*,” published in that excellent periodical work, *The Anti-Jacobin Review and Magazine*.

The Author conducts a fugitive *ex-director* of the Cisalpine Republic to London, whence he looks back (as is, I believe usually the case with all *confiscators*), with tears in his eyes, to the country and time, where and when his talents, or rather *talons*, were employed in the profitable work of *confiscation and murder*.

While the Imperialists were thus gathering the well earned fruits of their former victories, the French

“ Time was, I hastened on the banks of Po  
 The Hatchet quick, and contribution slow :  
 Compell’d the pamper’d Noble to retreat,  
 And garrison’d myself, his feudal seat :  
 Steel’d the young patriot’s squeamish arm to kill,  
 And learn the luxury of doing ill :  
 With ardour snapp’d the matrimonial thrall ;  
 Then ruled, as Abbess, in a convent’s wall :  
 Till the wild Russian join’d in Austria’s cause,  
 To prop religion, reinstate the laws,  
 Restore to slavery, Lombardia’s race,  
 And dash the new republic from her base.”

“ Ah ! sad I hasten’d through the midnight gloom,  
 With Brutus head and breeches, *en-costume* ;  
 When (as good Marius, ’mid Minturnæ’s bogs,  
 In silent anguish fraterniz’d with frogs.)  
 Quick oe’r Ferrara’s marshy plains I hie d,  
 No wine to cheer me, and no moon to guide.  
 Around me, French, Cisalpines, Piedmontese,  
 (Alas ! we’ve found no classic name for these,)  
 Ligurians, Romans, Spaniards, Poles, and Swiss,  
 Conscription volunteers, both *Trans* and *Ciss*,  
 (Like Babel’s bricklayers,) from Suwerow’s van,  
 O’er the communes in gay confusion ran.

Quick march’d the Russian through the track of blood  
 And each *deparment* groan’d, and melted where he stood.”

“ Next, through Milan I pass, and passing grieve,  
 Then sighing leave her, perhaps for ever leave,  
 Ill-fated city ! Commerce shall desile

‘Thy crowded streets, and joy and plenty smile :  
 The busy murmur through thy marts shall grow,  
 And English stuffs in warehouses o’erflow !

No more the keen ey’d Murder shall be seen,  
 To revel deftly on the guillotine.

But sober Justice on thy bench shall sit,  
 Throned by the *Russian steel*, and *gold of Pitt*.”

“ Delays were death, while wafted from my rear,  
 Loud blasts of transports pall my sicken’d ear ;

were meditating another attack on them, more desperate than before; in which, however, they were only preparing new disgrace for themselves, and fresh laurels for Suworow.

Moreau, after the battle of the Trebia, retreated in great haste from before Tortona, and having assembled the remnant of his own army and the miserable scattered remains of Macdonald's, amounting in all to about 25 or 30 thousand men, formed, in the beginning of July, a line of defence in the strong position, taken by Buonaparte when he first entered Italy, and which, from Savona to Vado, extended through the Apennines, and behind the Bormodia to Mellesimo. While the French General was employed in strengthening his already advantageous ground, and attending to the collecting of his army, and to the organizing and disciplining of the detachments sent to him from the interior of France, Field Marshal Suworow, confining himself to advancing the sieges of the important fortresses of Alexandria, Tortona and Mantua, and having his force very much divided, undertook no operation either against Genoa, still groaning under the yoke of republicanism, or against Moreau's position; so that, from the latter end of June to the middle of August, when the battle of Novi was fought, both armies remained in a state of seeming inactivity.

In the beginning of August, Moreau, to whose

---

Proclaim the victor, and confirm their choice,  
By each apostate renegado's voice :  
While, jilted by her votaries, *freedom* sees  
Her fanes revers'd, erased her sage decrees ;  
Fanatic crowds their exil'd priests recall,"  
*Old dukedom's rise, and new republics fall !*"

zeal, patience, courage, and military popularity, the Directory were (as Mr. Mallet du Pan\* justly observes) indebted for still having an army in Italy, was ordered to give up the command of that army to *Joubert*, and was himself appointed to take charge of the troops then assembling in Alsace.

Meanwhile the citadel of Alexandria, though defended by Gen. Gardenne, one of the bravest officers and staunchest republicans in the French army, capitulated, on the 21st of July, in a week after the trenches were opened by the Imperialists, under the Count of Bellegarde. The speedy reduction of this fortress tended to frustrate the plans of *Joubert*, whose present object was to gain time, in order to re-organize his army, discipline the new levies daily coming in from France, enable fresh succours to arrive, and secure the advantage of a diversion to be made by the army of the Alps, which was collecting in Dauphiné and Savoy, under General Champaïnet.

In this situation, and with these views before him, he received the dreadful intelligence of the fall of *Mantua*, which noble city and most important fortress had surrendered, by capitulation, to General Kray, on the 28th of July, after a siege of twenty days.

---

\* To this Gentleman's valuable periodical work, "*Le Mercure Britannique*" I am indebted for much of the information contained in this History. His knowledge of the state of the several revolutionized countries, appears to be superior to that of any other writer. From his remarks on that subject, I have profited largely, and in three or four places I have not scrupled to insert almost literal translations from his profound and elegant writings.

*Joubert* wished for nothing so much as delay; but, while it was doubtful whether a delay of even a month would give him all the additional advantages he expected from it, it was certain that a few days would bring Suworow a reinforcement of 20,000 victorious Austrians led by the brave *General Kray*. This consideration determined *Joubert* to wait no longer, but to take the offensive himself, attack the Imperialists before the junction could take place, and raise, if possible, the siege of Tortona.

Suworow suspected his intentions, and made his preparations accordingly. General Count of Bellegarde, with 8,000 men, was stationed at Serzo; *General Kray*, who had fortunately arrived with his army, was ordered to remain at Alexandria, while the Field Marshal himself, with 600 Russians, went to Poffolo Fomigolo, leaving the rest of the army at Rivalta.

On the 12th of August, *Joubert*, just after he had put his army in motion, had the mortification to learn, that the much-dreaded junction of *Kray* and Suworow, which his movements were intended to prevent, had already been effected! This unwelcome and unexpected news seems to have given him a foreboding of the fate which awaited him: for it appears that he wrote to his wife soon afterwards, that the unlucky position of the armies compelled him to engage under circumstances that gave him but little room to hope for success. It was, however, too late for him to retract; he must either advance or retreat; longer inactivity was become impossible. His left wing, therefore, advanced from Mellefimo, crossed the Bormida, dislodged the 8,000 men, under General Bellegarde, from Serzo, and posted

itself on the Orba, in the plains of Alexandria. The Count of Bellegarde had received orders to fall back, after a shew of resistance, in the like manner that General Ott, on a former occasion, had been ordered to act upon the approach of Macdonald. The Field-Marshal was resolved to render the battle general and decisive; he, therefore, strictly forbade the engaging in any partial action, in consequence of which order, the advanced posts fell back, one after another, and Joubert, who began to conceive hopes of driving the whole army with as much facility as he had done its detached bodies, pushed on into the vicinity of *Novi*, and took possession of that town.

The beautiful and extensive plain of Piedmont, where French cruelty had so often stained the ground with the blood of the innocent peasant, is terminated at *Novi* by a long ridge of hills, which though not very lofty, are extremely steep and rugged. Upon the top of this ridge, during the 14th, the French army formed an encampment, and on the 16th, Joubert intended to make a general attack upon the allies. In this, however, he was, notwithstanding the great advantage of his position, anticipated by the Field Marshal, who had not marched over so many mountains with his Russians to be stopped, at last, by the heights of *Novi*. Minds like that of Suworow delight in overcoming obstacles: the road to military glory is always up-hill and difficult of ascent.

On the 15th, the Imperialists marched to the attack. Joubert's army consisted of about 40,000 men; that of the Allies, of about 47,000. The superiority of the latter, as to the discipline of the

troops, who were, besides, flushed with victory, was still greater than their superiority of numbers; but the superiority of position, which the French possessed more than overbalanced every advantage of the Allies. Joubert had his line already formed, and his cannon ready to play upon the first column that attempted to advance; while the Imperialists had to break up, to advance, and to form again, under a continual fire, and that too on the side of a hill, upon which they could hardly drag their cannon, much less bring it to bear upon the enemy.

The Imperial army was in motion before daylight. The Field-Marshal had given orders that the greatest silence should be observed, and so strictly were these orders obeyed by the several divisions that the first intimation the French received of their approach was from the glistening of their bayonets in the rays of the sun, just peeping over the horizon. Instantly the beat *to arms* was heard, in the French camp, followed by the *Mar-sfeillois' hymn*, while cries of *Vive la Republique* and of *Tortone ou la mort* rent the air. But, the fans-culottes had now to meet an enemy, whose heart was neither to be softened by sounds, however sweet, nor appalled by noises, however loud or hideous.

The Allies advanced slowly and steadily on, in spite of the most tremendous fire from the whole line of the French, who, regularly drawn up on the edge of the heights, took their aim at leisure, without being exposed to a single shot in return. *Joubert* commanded his centre in person, *Moreau* the right wing, and *de Grouchy* the left. The right wing of the Imperialists, consisting of *Bellegarde's* corps of *Austrians*, was commanded by the gallant

*Kray*, the conqueror of Scherer and of *Mantua*; to the left General *Melas*, with another body of Austrians, was stationed a little in the rear to protect Tortona against the enemy's right wing, whose destination was thought to be against that important fortress; the centre, composed entirely of Russians, was led by *Suworow*.

At five o'clock General *Kray* reached the top of the heights, and immediately began the attack, in which, a few minutes after, he was followed by *Suworow* in the centre. It continued with great violence for several hours, during which, both sides alternately gave way and advanced again, 'till the Austrians and Russians were obliged to retire. About two o'clock, the Imperialists made another attack; but, in spite of all their efforts, the French still maintained their ground, making dreadful slaughter amongst their enemies. Both armies now prepared for a third and more mortal conflict: the Imperialists, marching over the bodies of their slain, rushed in upon the French, with the utmost fury. The battle became uncommonly bloody, the ground was strewed with dead and dying, *Joubert*, mortally wounded, was with much difficulty carried from the spot; but, still victory seemed to lean towards the republicans. Most fortunately for the Allies, just at this moment, the brave old General *Melas*, who had turned the flank and beaten the right wing of the French, came up with sixteen battalions of Austrian infantry. This decided the contest. The whole French line was thrown into confusion, they abandoned Novi and its heights, and fled with the utmost precipitation. *Joubert* was now dead; four other Generals, *Perignon*,

*Colli, Portonneau, and Gourchy* (who has since died of his wounds), were taken prisoners ; and *Moreau*, who had come to the battle as a volunteer under *Joubert*, led off, towards Nice, the wretched ruins of his army.

The loss of the French, in *the battle of Novi*, consisted of thirty pieces of cannon, fifty-seven wagons, 14 standards, the Commander in Chief killed, four Generals taken prisoners, and 15,000 men, in killed, wounded, and taken. Nor was the loss of the Imperialists much less, as to numbers. The Austrians had 5,600 men killed and wounded, and the killed of the Russians, owing to their obstinacy in *refusing quarter*, was proportionably greater. The lowest computation makes the killed and wounded of the Allies amount to 12,000 men. The French were said to have left five thousand men dead on the field of battle ; but, such was the carnage, such the indiscriminate heaps, in which Russians, Austrians and French lay dead, and in which they were buried, that the exact number of the latter was next to impossible to be ascertained by any body but *Moreau* himself, whose masters thought it prudent never to publish and detail on the unpleasant subject.

The Directory did, however, confess, for once, that they had been defeated. If *Joubert* had not been killed, the ungrateful despots would most assuredly have disgraced him ; but as he was dead, they were resolved to turn his death to as good account as possible, by paying to his memory such funeral honours as were well calculated to excite, amongst their volatile slaves, an enthusiasm that might assist in replenishing their depopulated ranks.

Numberless were the anecdotes, which were related in proof of his heroism ; amongst other stories, the silly people were told, that even after he fell, he continued to call out to his army : “ *en avant !* ” “ *en avant !* ”\* But, it is much more probable, that, when the Russian bullet entered his heart, he cried out, “ *Mon Dieu !* ”† and fainted. Not content, however with making him a *republican hero*, they must also make him a *Knight-errant*. It was said, that, as he marched up to the battle, he placed the portrait of his newly married wife in his bosom, saying to his officers : “ *Il faut bien que je triomphe ! J'ai juré à ma femme et à ma patrie, que J'arracherai le laurier de la tête de ce Russe.* ”‡ That Joubert should have worn this, is not, indeed, incredible : it was only adding one more false oath to those he had taken to support his King, and two Constitutions, all of which he had successively assisted to destroy ; nor were his expressions at all incompatible with that mixture of frivolity and ferocity, which characterise the republicans of France ; but, he forgot, or was not informed, that, if there was any valour-inspiring virtue in *portraits*, Suworow carried one at his breast as well as he.§ At any rate, neither the oath nor the portrait

\* “ Go on ! Go on ! ”

† “ My God ! ”

‡ “ I must surely conquer ! I have sworn to my wife and to my country, that I will tear the laurel from the brow of this Russian.”

§ The portrait of the Empress of Russia. See the plate at the head of this work.

was of any avail. The laurel still grew and still flourished on the brow of *Suworow*, who now became a *Prince* in addition to his other titles; while disappointment, defeat and death were the lot of the presumptuous *Joubert*, whose vile carcase went to fatten the land of that very King of Sardinia, whom, only seven months before, he had betrayed and driven from his palace and his dominions, and whose misfortunes he had aggravated by every species of contumely, insult, and degradation.\*

With the *battle of Novi* terminated Suworow's Campaign in Italy, whence he soon after marched, with his Russians, to co operate with the brave Archduke Charles, in Switzerland and on the Rhine, leaving the Austrians, under Generals Kray and Mellas, to act against the French army, which was now stationed in the states of Genoa, under the command of the ferocious Champoinet, the plunderer of Naples and of Rome. This army was considerably augmented, and gave that of the Austrians no small embarrassment; but, though Genoa, when the last advices came away, still writhed under the horrible tyranny of the republicans, and though some few passes, posts, and trifling districts, on the skirts of Savoy and Piedmont, still remained in their possession, their forces were acting rather as defenders of France than invaders of Italy. *Civita-Vechia* and *Rome*, the only places of the south remaining in their hands, surrendered; the former, to the brave and enterprizing Captain Trowbridge of the British Navy; and the latter, to the no less gallant General Boucard, a Swiss, in the service of the

---

\* See the note in page 205.

King of Naples, having under his command a body of Neapolitans and Russians, and a few British soldiers and marines, who also had the honour to assist in wresting the city of the Cæsars from the hands of the Gauls, while their countrymen, at *Acra*, were defending the tombs of antiquity against the wrath of these modern barbarians.

But, all these subsequent events were no more than the natural consequences of the victories of *Suworow*. It was to his wisdom, his valour, his promptitude and perseverance, and to the animating confidence which his great name inspired, that Italy owed its deliverance. In the space of four months from the latter end of April to that of August, he tore up by the roots four republican and infidel despotisms, watered by the blood of the loyal and the faithful, and, in their stead, replanted Royalty and Christianity. The *Cisalpine*, the *Ligurian*, the *Roman* and the *Vesuvian* republics are no longer known but as monuments of his fame, while eighteen millions of people, delivered from the degrading curse, are daily calling to heaven for blessings on his head.

END  
Of the Italian Campaign.

---

*Copy Right secured according to Law.*

---









